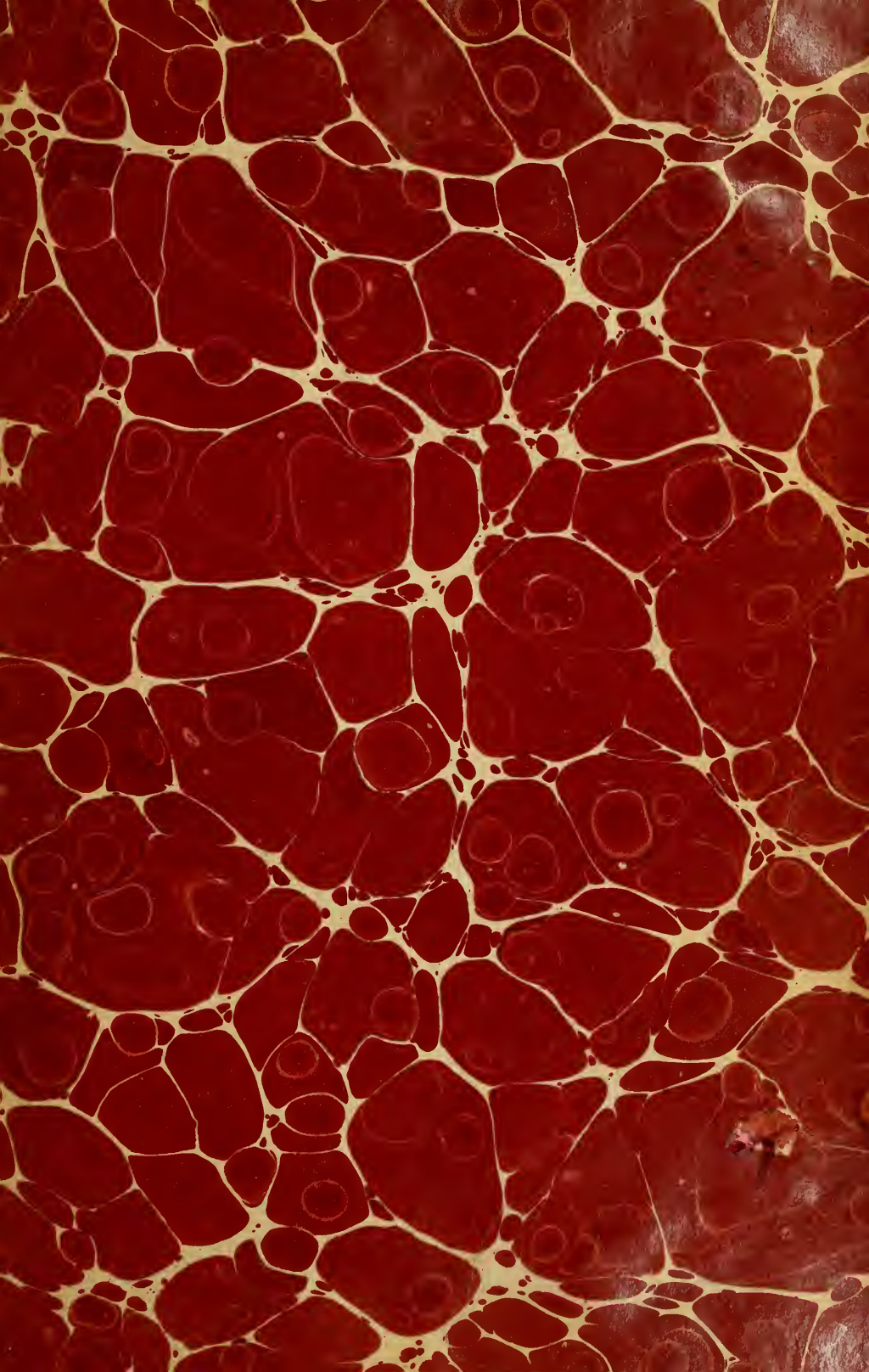




Class F74

Book .E7 H6





19

194

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOLUME II.

April, 1903



TO

January, 1904

Published by
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY
Somerville, Mass.

OCT 18 1907

Fid
S. J. C.

Somerville Historical Society

Season of 1903-1904

TUFTS HOUSE = = 78 Sycamore Street

EIGHT O'CLOCK

PROGRAMME

October 5—BUSINESS MEETING

November 4—The Story of Land on Barberry Lane

AARON SARGENT

November 18—Queen Victoria and Her Relations with the
American People

CHARLES COWLEY, Lowell

December 2—John S. Edgerly and His Home on Winter Hill

Mrs. HELEN M. DESPEAUX

December 7—BUSINESS MEETING

December 16—Old Middlesex and New

LEVI S. GOULD, Melrose

January 6—In and About Union Square Before the War

CHARLES D. ELLIOT

January 20—Authors' Readings

EDWIN DAY SIBLEY

SAM WALTER FOSS

February 1—BUSINESS MEETING

February 3—Feeding an Army

JOHN M. WOODS

February 17—Incidents in a Long Life in the Public Service

JAIRUS MANN

March 2—Thomas Brigham, the Puritan—An Original Settler

WILLIAM E. BRIGHAM

March 16—Gregory Stone and Some of His Descendants

Miss SARA A. STONE

April 4—Annual meeting

TABLE OF CONTENTS

VOL. II., NO. 1.

	Page
Literary Men and Women of Somerville, I.....David Lee Maulsby	1
The Mallet Family.....Florence E. Carr	10
The Charlestown School in the 17th Century, I.	
Frank Mortimer Hawes	15
Report of the Necrology Committee for 1902,	22
William and George W. AyersCaptain Martin Binney	22

VOL. II., NO. 2.

Literary Men and Women of Somerville, IIDavid Lee Maulsby	25
The Charlestown School in the 17th Century, II.	
Frank Mortimer Hawes	32
Neighborhood Sketch No. 6.....John F. Ayer	42
Washington Street As It Was.....Mrs. O. S. Knapp	46

VOL. II., NO. 3.

Historical Sketch of the Old Middlesex Canal	
Herbert Pierce Yeaton	49
Charlestown Schools in the 18th Century....Frank Mortimer Hawes	58
Literary Men and Women of Somerville, III....David Lee Maulsby	66

VOL. II., NO. 4.

Dedication of Prospect Hill Park and Memorial Tower.....	73
Israel Putnam and Prospect Hill.....Rev. A. P. Putnam, D. D.	85
Obituary Notices: Hon. Austin Belknap.....	100
Dr. Horace Carr White.....	101
M. Agnes Hunt.....	103
Mary M. McKay.....	104
Index.....	105

ILLUSTRATIONS.

The Old Powder House, No. I.....	Frontispiece
Portrait of Professor David Lee Maulsby, No. II.....	Frontispiece
Middlesex Canal and Medford Turnpike, Ruins of	
the Convent in the Distance, No. III.....	Frontispiece
Prospect Hill Tower, No. IV.....	Frontispiece
Portraits of Governor John L. Bates, Hon. Edward Glines,	
John F. Ayer, Rev. J. Vanor Garton, No. IV....	Opposite Page 79
Raising of the Flag on Prospect Hill, No. IV.....	Opposite Page 85

Historic Leaves

Published by the

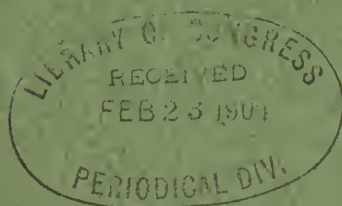
Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1903

Vol. II

No. 1



CONTENTS.

	PAGE
THE OLD POWDER HOUSE.	<i>Frontispiece</i>
LITERARY MEN AND WOMEN OF SOMERVILLE. <i>David Lee Maulsby</i>	1
THE MALLET FAMILY. <i>Florence E. Carr</i>	10
THE CHARLESTOWN SCHOOL IN THE 17TH CENTURY. <i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i>	15
REPORT OF NECROLOGY COMMITTEE FOR 1902.	22
WILLIAM AND GEORGE W. AYERS. <i>Capt. Martin Binney</i>	22

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

19 Central Street, Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio*

SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



OLD POWDER HOUSE, SOMERVILLE.

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. II.

APRIL, 1903.

NO. I.

LITERARY MEN AND WOMEN OF SOMERVILLE.

By David Lee Maulsby.*

AFTER accepting the invitation of the Somerville Historical Society to address it upon the men and women of this city who have been writers, I found it necessary to draw some lines of limitation about the subject. To treat, even inadequately, all of our fellow-citizens that have issued their thoughts in print would be a greater undertaking than a single hour could see completed. It has seemed wise, therefore, to mark a boundary of demarcation between the dead and the living, and to confine this paper to those Somerville authors that are no longer our flesh-and-blood companions. Thus we shall avoid the embarrassment of selection among present-day writers, and shall also have a subject that is clearly defined, and of moderate extent.

One further limitation has seemed proper. There are two persons of distinction who have lived in Somerville, but who can hardly be included among her literary men. I mean Governor Winthrop and Edward Everett. Neither is literary, in the strictest sense of the word, though both have left books behind them. And in any event their connection with the city seems so remote or so accidental that they may well be dismissed from a paper of this kind, after mere mention.

There is another group of men who stand upon the threshold

* The following persons have rendered valuable help to the writer in the preparation of this paper: Mrs. John F. Ayer, Mr. Edwin M. Bacon, Miss Mary Bacon, Mr. Charles D. Elliot, Mr. Sam Walter Foss, Mrs. Mae D. Frazar, Mrs. Barbara Galpin, Mr. J. O. Hayden, Mrs. George T. Knight, Rev. W. H. Pierson, Mr. L. B. Pillsbury, Mrs. Lucy B. Ransom, Rev. Anson Titus, Miss Anna P. Vinal.

of literary work, in having published one or more books, but who fail of entrance into the class we are to consider by reason of the more practical character of their writing. Dr. Luther V. Bell is an example of this class, with his book upon "The Ventilation of Schoolhouses." Another is Colonel Herbert E. Hill, a Vermonter, who fought in the Civil War, and afterward removed to Somerville, where he resided until his death in 1892. It was he who is responsible for the frowning cannon upon Central Hill. Again Colonel Hill showed his generosity and patriotism by the two monuments which he erected on Virginia battlefields, one of them bearing the inscription: "Committed to the care of those once a brave foe, now our generous friends." Colonel Hill has left two addresses on patriotic and historical subjects. Then there is the ex-librarian, John S. Hayes, whose noble work in making our public library more efficient is gratefully remembered. Mr. Hayes gave two notable addresses, one on "The Public Library and the State," the other containing valuable historical information, and delivered at the laying of the cornerstone of the Winter-hill Congregational church. The work of these three men is worthy of cordial appreciation, and is semi-literary in character. If more detailed consideration is given to the names that are to follow, there is no derogation of the value of other sorts of service, only the recognition of literature as in some sense detached from immediately practical ends,—as in a measure itself constituting its own end.

Among the literary men of Somerville, General Douglas Frazar combines the distinction of being both man of affairs and author. His family goes back to William Bradford through his mother, and to John Alden through his father. Although prepared for Harvard, Mr. Frazar chose to go to sea. His father's desire took him to Paris to study the French language, and the Civil War, when it came, drew him into its service; but the main currents of his being set toward the ocean, and it was only through special inducements that his employment, especially in his latter years, was ashore. He was constantly reading and writing, even on board ship. When in business in China, he was correspondent of the Boston Traveler. After his marriage

he wrote for the *Youth's Companion* and Harper's, not to speak in detail of his several lectures and translations.

Mr. Frazar's first book was on "Practical Boat Sailing." The value of this standard treatise is proved by its reappearance in French, German, and Spanish. So much for the practical side. "Perseverance Island" (1884) is a work of juvenile fiction, popular in England, as well as in America. This book out-Crusoes Crusoe. Its hero is cast upon one of the unknown islands of the Pacific, with no friendly well-stored wreck at hand. With almost nothing but his hands and his scientific knowledge, the lonely sailor makes tools and house, gunpowder, bricks, a water wheel, a blast-furnace, even a sub-marine boat and a flying machine. Rich in real estate and in discovered gold, this modern Selkirk is properly rescued at last. "The Log of the Maryland" (1890), in the guise of fiction, is in effect an account of one of Captain Frazar's own voyages. The routine and adventures of a long ocean journey are faithfully told. The sea-fight with Chinese pirates, with which the story closes, bristles with excitement.

Perhaps Mr. Frazar's books are as remarkable for their varied knowledge as for any one quality, though they are interesting, as well. In his active life as a sailor, and in his excursions into French and English literature, he gathered the facts and the readiness of expression which stood him in good stead as an author.

An earlier writer is Isaac F. Shepard, who lived in Somerville and Cambridge. He published much. Besides being editor of the *Christian Souvenir*, and contributing to the *Christian Examiner*, the list of his writings includes: a poem on "The Seventy-first Anniversary of Leicester Academy, Massachusetts," August 7, 1835; a poem on "The Will of God," printed about 1837; a volume of poems, "Pebbles From Castalia," 1840; a "Fourth-of-July Address," given in West Killingly, Conn., 1856.

Mr. Shepard appears to have been a fluent writer of English. His tale, "Lewis Benton," published in 1842, shows considerable facility of expression. It is a temperance story, picturing the deterioration of a well-meaning and able man through a failure

to abstain entirely from the use of liquor. The little volume in which this tale appears is a quaint example of book-making two generations ago. The wood-cuts are especially noteworthy in their crude simplicity, and suggest comparison with the consummate art of our contemporary magazines.

Not yet come into the world when this little book was published, our next author gives the impression of having been a young man when he left the world. Lewis Cass Flanagan was born in Somerville in 1850, and died at North Weymouth in 1900. He was graduated from the Franklin grammar school. Later, though practicing pharmacy, he showed much interest in parliamentary law, conducting a class in this subject at the Young Men's Christian Association of Boston. He was also a student of forestry. Early in life he manifested a taste for literary composition, publishing many articles in prose and poetry in the Cambridge and Somerville papers.

Mr. Flanagan attended the Unitarian church in this city, and wrote a number of prose essays for the meetings of the Unity Club. Selections from his writings were published after his death, under the title, "Essays in Poetry and Prose." Among the prose essays is one containing curious information on "Some Minor Poets of America." Another treats at length the career of Miss Kemble, the actor. A third describes the gray pine of New England. But the most original of the printed prose writings are the burlesque fables. These are whimsical in character, and point a moral, sometimes severe, as often gay. One of the very shortest is as follows:—

XXXI.—THE ANT AND THE ELEPHANT.

"An Ant, meeting an Elephant, exclaimed: 'Sirrah! fellow, one of us must turn out.' 'One of us must indeed turn out,' replied the Elephant, as he lifted his foot to advance. Whereupon the Ant ran nimbly to one side, and thus escaped crushing.

"'I find it best to humor these characters,' said the Ant to herself, as the Elephant passed by; and then, picking up her burden, she regained the highway and continued on her journey.

"Impudence with discretion does fairly well."

Among the poems is a plaintive song of "The Wild Rose." Almost the only poem of a sentimental cast celebrates an experience while the author was journeying homeward from California by way of the Isthmus of Panama. He had met a fair stranger on board ship, but now the parting must come. Surely there is a touch of Whittier in the following lines:—

"And that was all. The dream is o'er;
No word from lip or pen;
Her smiling eyes I'll see no more,
Nor hear her voice again.

"Sometimes the past will come to me
On mem'ry's grateful tide;
I sail again the western sea,
And she is by my side.

"The day has melted like a dream
Beyond the billow's crest,
And softly now the moonbeams stream
Across the ocean's breast.

"The night wind sounds a soothing dirge
Around the corded poles,
And, stretching far, the phosphor surge
In chastened splendor rolls. . . .

"Back from the swiftly gliding hull
There gleams a pathway white,
O'er which through all the day the gull
Has winged his silent flight.

"Now with the scene comes gently forth
The music from her mouth;
'T is gone, and I am in the North,
And she is in the South."

The column of Pencillings in the Somerville Journal has long attracted the attention of exchange editors throughout the country. Particularly in the South and West, papers make liberal use of the mingled fun and wisdom to be found in this

treasury. The originator of Pencillings was George Russell Jackson, who in 1877, after twelve years of newspaper experience, began to write for the Journal. He conducted the department until 1884, meanwhile contributing to the paper comical police reports, which were a feature of interest. Mr. Hayden speaks of Mr. Jackson as a born humorist, the peer of any in his native power. He not only wrote fun by the yard, but he overflowed with it in private conversation.

Such writing has an evanescent quality, making quotation hazardous. But the following quatrains are not untimely:—

“When icy blasts come from the pole,
And redden nose and chin,
Then happy is the man whose coal
Is safely in the bin.

“On second thoughts, when from the pole
Come blasts that chill us through,
Then happy is the man whose coal
Is in and paid for, too.”

Not infrequently Mr. Jackson uttered a wise maxim in the midst of his jokes, as: “The man who always says what he thinks should think well what he says.” Again, “The man who knows that he doesn’t know everything, knows something.” So said Socrates.

Mr. Jackson contributed to the Boston Courier, the Boston Commercial Bulletin, the New York Independent, and the Atlantic Monthly. He wrote many songs, and was the author of a popular opera-cantata, called “The Cranberry Pickers.” He died December 9, 1898, aged fifty-eight years.

As a means of preparing for an easy transition a little later from the men to the women writers of Somerville, let us speak of the Munroe family. Edwin Munroe, of Scotch descent, married Eliza (?) Fowle, of Lexington. Three children of these parents, a brother and two sisters, have intimate relation with the literary history of Somerville. These are Edwin Munroe, who married Nancy Thorning, Eliza Ann Munroe, who married Rev. Henry Bacon, and Martha Fowle Munroe, who married Rev. El-

bridge Gerry Brooks. The son of the last-named marriage is known to all residents of Somerville, and to many throughout the land.

In industry and consequent fruitfulness, it is not too much to say that Elbridge Streeter Brooks is the leading writer among those who, in life and death, have been identified with the city of Somerville. He has written biography, fiction, and history, to the number of more than forty volumes. His first book was a biography of Rev. Elbridge Gerry Brooks, dedicated to the author's mother,—“whose loyal and loving aid made more effective the life-work of my father.” Many of the volumes by Mr. Brooks have attained a wide popularity, and so have met his cherished wish, that his works in the public library might show, in their well-worn binding, the sign that they had been often and vigorously handled. The kind of writing in which Mr. Brooks excels is a mingling of historic fact with playful imagination. Take, for example, “The Century Book of Famous Americans,” of which the Somerville library owns four copies, all bearing the marks of use. What could be more fascinating to the young people, for whom primarily this book was written, than to be transported from Boston to Quincy and Plymouth, from New York to Philadelphia, then to Virginia and Kentucky, thence hurried to the early homes of Lincoln and of Grant, regaled all along the way with bits of story about the men who have made these places famous? Here is no dull guide-book or chart of dates and battles, but a lively conversation among an uncle and the five boys and girls he is piloting,—talk rendered vivid and readable by the running question and commentary of these young Americans, in the vital and unstudied language of the present day. No wonder the book is issued under the auspices of the National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution. No wonder twenty thousand copies were sold in three months after publication. There surely is no easier, because no more interesting, way in which to become acquainted with the leading facts in our country's history.

Into the so-called fiction written by Mr. Brooks historic fact enters almost unawares, just as in books whose main interest is

historical there occurs a distinct imaginative element. One book, "Wood Cove Island," is a stirring story of a contest between two opposing factions, the good boys and girls on one side, and the bad boys on the other, to gain and keep possession of a small island, made worth fighting for by the presence of an old scow, altered into a feudal castle by rude carpentry and youthful imagination. On this fictional background appear Professor Longfellow of Harvard, as a summer visitor, and his friend Charles Sumner, both of whom advise the combatants, without interfering with them. Any boy should like this book. Again, read "Historic Girls," or "Historic Boys," if you would get a vivid series of true pictures of widely separated ages, with differing customs, but the same child-nature persisting through all. Or dip into "Storied Holidays" to find some scene of childhood, grave or gay, set in the festivities of Christmas, St. Valentine's Day, or Midsummer Eve.

Throughout the works of Mr. Brooks there is earnest effort to make the historic parts correct as to fact, and also as to accessories of costume, architecture, and language. There is danger, intrinsic in such undertaking, that the learning shall appear artificial and pedantic. But the author recognizes this hazard, and, while not "writing down" to his young readers, provides against it. It would be difficult to find a better blending of dry events and ever-living human nature than in some of his sketches. It is their truth to history that makes the writings of Mr. Brooks respected by older readers, who, as well as the young, are at the same time attracted and held by the play of a cheerful and unwaning fancy.

Another member of the Munroe household will introduce us to our women writers, the second main division of the subject. Mrs. E. A. Bacon-Lathrop came to Somerville from Lexington in childhood. She married a Universalist minister,—Rev. Henry Bacon,—who was the first editor of the Universalist and Ladies' Repository, in 1832. On his death in 1856, his wife at once took up the editorial work that her husband laid down, and from July, 1856, until July, 1860, she ably conducted the magazine along religious lines. On the publisher's desire to render the Re-

pository of greater secular interest, Mrs. Bacon resigned her editorship, although her occasional contributions to the magazine continued. The Repository contains many examples of verse from the pen of Mrs. Bacon, and a few examples of her prose. We may perhaps best say that the Repository itself is the monument of her labors. But through life her pen was busy. As a child, she made experiments in composition. When her husband died, Mrs. Bacon published an extended "Memoir" of him; also she contributed to *The Rose of Sharon*, an annual, in the fashion of those days, with miscellaneous contents and steel engravings. Her letters, written from abroad in 1867, are described as very entertaining. A little book, called "Only a Keepsake," privately printed during her life, contains some of her poems. Here are a few lines about April:—

"Life! life! 't is singing in the rills
And piping in the meadows,
'T is bursting from the gray old trees
That cast their ghostly shadows.
The rose's stem is flushed with red,
With green is streaked the willow,
And green the little grasses shoot
Where lay the snowy pillow."

And here are a few on a more intimate subject—her son, going to the war:—

"He stands before me tall and fair,
The sunlight dancing on his hair,
His stalwart arm to me he shows,
His broad breast heaves with manly throes.

"Was it for this I gladdened so
To see him up from boyhood grow?
For this I read him many a tale
Of brave old warriors clad in mail?"

This son, Henry, was wounded in the second battle of Bull Run, and, being discharged from the army, devoted himself to art abroad.

Mrs. Bacon was married to Rev. Thomas L. Lathrop, a Unitarian minister, in 1862. She died April 7, 1900, shortly after the death of her second husband. Those who knew her say that she was a gentlewoman of the old school, in the best sense of the term. A small oil painting by her son Henry shows her with refined and gentle face, her dark hair crowned with a small cap, sitting with hands quietly folded, as if in a habitual attitude of reverie.

[To be continued.]

THE MALLET FAMILY.

By *Fiorence E. Carr.*

THERE are many people in the United States to-day who bear the name of Mallet, and they are undoubtedly the descendants of those Mallets who were Huguenot refugees, and who came to this country at the time of the Revocation in France, or even earlier. They were of a rich and powerful family of Normandy in the early history of France, and were early interested in the Reformation. The title is still borne by the head of the family in France, viz., the Marquis Malet de Graville, and the name of Mallet is one still distinguished in France and America in art and science. Baird, the historian, says: "Charles, Duke of Orleans, third and favorite son of Francis I., of France, may have had sincere predilections for Protestantism. At least, it is barely possible that the very remarkable instructions given to his secretary, Antoine de Mallet, when, on the eighth of September, 1543, Charles sent him to the Elector of Saxony and the Landgrave of Hesse, Protestants, were something besides mere diplomatic intrigues to secure for his father's projects the support of these princes. Lefevre, a great Protestant, was Charles' tutor, and a friend of Mallet."

This Mallet must have been a skilled diplomat and an orator to have pleaded his cause before foreign rulers. Then there was Paul Henri Mallet, born in Geneva of refugee parents. He became famous for his writings on the history of Denmark and Sweden, at whose courts he lived for a time. History mentions

many more of these Mallets of whom we have not the space to tell.

That the Mallets were early subjected to severe persecution because of their devotion to the cause is amply proved by various records, and while there is no actual proof that those who fled to this country were of the same family, there is every reason to believe that they were. The custom in those days of re-naming children for the elders of the family makes it difficult to trace a direct line, but it also goes to prove in this instance a kinship, since all of the Mallet emigrants to this country bear the same Christian names. There were several Mallets who fled to America about the same time and settled in different localities. We are told that David Mallet, who, with his five sons, held a position of prominence in the army of Louis XIV., fled to England, and died there in 1691. One son was broken on the wheel, another established himself as a physician in Yorkshire, Eng. A third went to Germany, and we hear of a David Mallet, of Rouen, and later hat manufacturer in Berlin in 1685, who was probably one of these five sons. The fourth son, John, came to America, bringing with him a brother and a nephew named Peter. This John was a ship carpenter, so tradition says, and probably escaped from Lyons, France. He was a man of considerable wealth, and succeeded in bringing some of it with him. He first came to North Carolina, and made several return voyages (probably secretly) to France. During one of his return trips his wife and child were lost at sea. He then married his servant, Johannah Larion, a woman said to be very beautiful; to them were born several children. This couple finally settled in Fairfield, Conn., and died at a ripe old age, leaving many descendants and much property. The sons and daughters of families in those days were more numerous than at the present time, and there is no doubt that some of this John's descendants remained in North Carolina, and finally settled in Virginia, since the name of Mallet is among those of the early settlers of Manakin, Va.

Charles Weiss, who was assisted in his work of compiling a history of Huguenots in France and America by a Charles Mallet, tells of the contraband trade established by the refugees, which

constituted a loss for France. They caused to be sent, by correspondents whom they had at Lyons and in the principal towns of Dauphiny, articles of daily consumption. In the space of two years the three brothers, Jean, Jacques, and Louis Mallet, thus succeeded in drawing from the kingdom manufactured articles to the value of more than a million livres.

Among the Huguenots who settled in Oxford, Mass., was Jean Mallet, in whom we of Somerville are more particularly interested. Bolbee, France, in the province of Normandy, was believed to be the home of this man. He sailed from England together with thirty families in 1685 or '86. Gabriel Bernon, a man of considerable wealth and a Huguenot of some notability, was the original owner of some 25,000 acres in what is now a part of the town of Oxford, having received a grant of the same by purchase from Governor Dudley. This little company first landed at Fort Hill, Boston, and were cared for by friends, and probably Jean and his children were received by relatives, as there were then Mallets living in Boston. And just here I would like to say that I believe this Jean to have been a brother of the David before mentioned, who fled to England. This little company of Huguenots, among whom we find the names of Faneuil, Bowdoin, Sigourney, etc., which have since become so familiar in the history of old Boston, proceeded to Oxford and established a settlement which bid fair to become a flourishing, prosperous town. After a few years, however, the Indians, who had been represented as peaceful, became troublesome, and at length a massacre took place. There was also some trouble over the title deeds, which never became straightened, and the families, becoming disheartened, finally returned, some to Boston and others to New Rochelle, N. Y. Traces of these French homes are still to be seen in the town of Oxford, but, unfortunately, the church records of that time are lost. The descendants of Gabriel Bernon, however, still have many papers relating to that time, and in the list appended to one of those papers we find the name of Jean Mallet, Ancien or Elder of the church. Jean Mallet returned to Boston in 1696, and probably practiced his trade of shipwright. He had at this time six children, all of whom were grown and had

escaped with him from France. There is no record of the mother of these children, and doubtless she died either in France or soon after reaching America. In 1702 we find that Jean purchased ten acres of land in Somerville of Jonathan Fosket, and proceeded to erect the old mill now known as the Powder House.

It is commonly believed that at this time occurred the marriage of Jean Mallet and Jane Lyrion, and that she died, and in 1712 he married Ann Mico. This I believe to be a mistake. Old Jean was then about sixty years old, and had evidently seen many hardships in life. Everything points to the fact that he built the mill to establish his two sons, Andrew and Louis, in business, they having been brought up as millers. His son John, evidently the eldest, and whom he mentions in his will as having started in life, I believe to have been that John who was a shop-keeper in Boston, and whose will was probated in Boston in 1741, and that he is the John who married Jane Lyrion, Ann Mico, and later Elizabeth Makerwhit, who survived him.

I have mentioned a John Mallet who married Johannah Larion in Fairfield, Conn. This Johannah Larion had a brother Louis, who was a refugee and settled in Milford, Conn. He became very wealthy, and, dying at a good old age, left a generous bequest to the French church in Boston, and also to the one at New Rochelle, N. Y. I believe Jane Lyrion, who married John Mallet, of Boston, to have been a younger sister of Louis and Johannah, and that her husband was a cousin of the Fairfield Mallet.

A homestead was built near the old mill, and old Jean probably removed here with his son Andrew and daughters Mary and Elizabeth. His son Matthew (who is also mentioned as being of Stratford, Conn., thus further proving kinship with the Connecticut branch) married at Cambridge in 1703 Abigail Linn. For some time they lived at the old mill, the family still retaining their interest in the French church in Boston, of which Jean still served as elder. This church was held in the Latin schoolhouse situated on School street, on the site now covered by a portion of King's Chapel, and down to the statue of Franklin in front of the city hall. Here the French Protestants worshipped for about thirty

years, when they were allowed to build a church of their own on the site now occupied by the School-street savings bank.

In 1709 occurred a break in the family at the old mill, and daughter Mary married Daniel Blodget, of Woburn. About this time son Louis removed to Somerville and married Margaret Fosdick. Louis seems to have alternated between Somerville and Boston, sometimes living in one town, and then in the other. In 1715 son Andrew married Martha Morris, of Cambridge, and brought his bride home to the old mill, and finally Elizabeth, the last of the flock, was married in the old French church, in 1719, to Daniel Vieaux.

In 1720 old Jean made his will, leaving legacies to his daughters and to his sons John and Matthew, and to his sons Andrew and Louis the homestead and the now famous mill. Two years after he died, at the age of seventy-eight years, and is buried in the old cemetery at Charlestown. Louis soon sold his share of the homestead and mill to Andrew, who continued to live on the estate until his death in 1743. It is this son of old Jean who numbers the most numerous descendants of the Charlestown Mallets. His children, numbering eight, all grew up and married, as follows: Andrew married twice, and died before his father. John married Martha Wilson, and removed to Topsham, Me., where his descendants still live, some of whom bore a noble part in the Revolutionary War. Martha married Shadrach Ireland. Elizabeth married Ephraim Mallet, probably her cousin. Michael married Martha Robinson. To him was left the bulk of his father's property, subject to a life interest held by his mother. In 1747 he sold the old mill to William Foye, treasurer of the Bay State Colony, and here was stored the powder belonging to the colony. Michael was guardian for his young brother Isaac and his sisters Mary and Phoebe, minor children at the time of their father's death. Isaac in after years became very wealthy, and owned considerable land in Charlestown. He was a blacksmith and schoolmaster at the Neck, selectman, etc. A great deal of his property was destroyed at the burning of Charlestown during the battle of Bunker Hill, and he claimed damages to the amount of \$3,200, which, of course, he never received. The sons

of Ephraim and Elizabeth Mallet served faithfully in the Revolution, and we find Ephraim Mallet, aged eighteen years, among the little garrison on Prospect Hill. Afterward he re-enlisted at Fishkill, N. Y., and there are various records of his service in the archives of the State House in Boston.

The name of Mallet, once so common in this locality, is now extinct, and all that remains to mark the record of their lives are a few old gravestones in the ancient cemetery at Charlestown, and various wills and deeds in the Registry offices of Middlesex county. Much of story and romance is hidden between the lines of these old records, and in imagination one can call up vivid pictures of life in the old colonial days while poring over these old papers.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOL IN THE 17TH CENTURY.

By Frank Mortimer Hawes.

IN presenting this account of the first school of Charlestown, we trust that the time given to musty old records has not been spent unprofitably. If the story awaken in the reader's mind an interest commensurate with that which held us to the task, our labors will be amply rewarded.

Although settled a year or more previous, Charlestown was incorporated—to use the date in our Court Manual—August 23, 1630. The bounds of the town had no definite limits, but we learn that, March 3, 1636, they extended “eight miles into the country, from the meeting house.” In September, 1642, a part of Charlestown was set off and incorporated as the town of Woburn, and May 2, 1649, the indefinitely designated “Mistick Side” became the town of Malden. The territory that remained extended as far as the bounds of Reading, and included (not to mention more remote districts) besides “the peninsula,” a large part of Medford, portions of Cambridge and Arlington, and the whole of Somerville. This was, practically, the Charlestown of the seventeenth and a part of the eighteenth century, as there was no further diminution of territory until 1725, when Stoneham was made a township.

Our story begins, as far as the records are concerned, June 3, 1636, when "Mr. William Witherell was agreed with to keepe a schoole for a twelve month, to begin the 8 of the VI. month, & to have £40 for this yeare."

Frothingham, in his *History* (page 65), makes this comment: "This simple record is evidence of one of the most honorable facts of the time, namely, that a public school, and, judging from the salary, a free school, at least for this twelve-month, was thus early established here, and on the principle of voluntary taxation. It may be worth while to remember that this date is eleven years prior to the so often quoted law of Massachusetts, compelling towns to maintain schools."

A brief word on this first-named school teacher of Charlestown will not be amiss. Rev. William Witherell (the name admits of various spellings) came from Maidstone, Kent, Eng., in 1635, under certificate from the mayor of that place, where he had been schoolmaster. He was bred at Corpus Christi, Cambridge, took his degree of A. B. in 1623, and his master's degree in 1626. In the ship "Hercules," which sailed from Sandwich, there came with Mr. Witherell his wife, three children, and a servant. Savage adds that, after preaching in Duxbury, he became the minister of the second parish of Scituate in 1645, that several children were born to him in this country, and that he died April 9, 1684. A recent genealogical note in the *Boston Evening Transcript* gives his age as twenty-five in 1627, when he married in Canterbury, Eng., Mary Fisher. That he was for several years the schoolmaster of Charlestown appears from the following:—

"11: 12 mo. 1636. Mr. Wetherell was granted a House plott with his cellar, selling his other house and part of his ground."

"12: 12 mo. 1637. About Mr. Wetherell it was referred to Mr. Greene and Mr. Lerner to settle his wages for the Yeare past in pt and pt to come & they chose Mr. Ralph Sprague for a third."

"28: X mo. 1638. John Stratton was admitted a townsman & has liberty to buy Mr. Wetherell's house."

1641. Mr. Wethrall's name appears in a list of those to whom an assignment of "lotts" was made.

In a general town meeting, 20: 11 mo. 1646, "it was agreed yt a Rate of £15 should be gathered of the Towne toward the Schole for this Yeare & the £5 yt Major Sedgwick is to pay this Year (for the Island) for the Schole, also the Towns pt of Mistick Ware for the Schole forever." Thus early we have mention of an income derived from rentals, bequests, etc., which were to grow into a very respectable school fund. From time to time we shall have occasion to refer to this.

As far as we can now determine, the first mention of a schoolhouse was at a town meeting, held 1: 11 mo. 1648 (or, new style, January 11, 1649), when it was agreed that the seven selectmen should see about and order "a fitt place for a Schole house and it to bee sett up and built at the Towns Charge." The following month it was voted "to lay out for the Towne use upon the Windmill Hill a place for a Schole house and a place for the Scholmaisters house, and Mr. Francis Willoughby & Mr. Robert Hale were desired to lay them out."

"1: 3 mo. 1650. It was agree by all ye Inhabitants of the Towne that the Towne would allow unto a Scholmaister (to be agreed with by the officers) by a rate made to that end to make up the rent for Lovell's Island £20 by the year, besides the Schollers pay. Agreed that a Schole house and a Watch Tower be erected on Windmill Hill & to be paid by a general rate & that Mr. Francis Willoughby, Mr. Ralph Mowsall, Mr. William Stilson & Mr. Robert Hale are chosen to agree with a convenient number of Carpenters that the work be carried on as speedily & frugally as may be."

"3: X mo. 1651. The rate of the Towne gathered by the two constables Swett and Lowden of £53 about the Scholhouse & meeting house is brought in & the most of it disbursed to workmen as appears by accounts."

Frothingham (page 5) makes the comment that the church and the schoolhouse stood side by side quietly diffusing their beneficent influences. The poet Whittier, in the closing stanza of "Our State," expresses a similar idea:—

“Nor heeds the sceptic’s puny hands,
While near her school the church-spire stands;
Nor fears the blinded bigot’s rule,
While near her church-spire stands the school.”

It would seem that a procrastinating spirit, in the matter of providing school buildings, early displayed itself in this community. The demand was an urgent one. The selectmen are given full power to choose a site and erect the structure. A month later two influential citizens are selected to help the Fathers of the town in their arduous task. More than a year passes, and nothing has been done. The citizen committee is doubled, and the instructions, amounting almost to a command, urge that the work be done “speedily.” A year and a half from this time, or three years lacking a month from its inception, the house is completed and the bills are paid.

As the sum mentioned (£53) included repairs on the meeting house, probably we never shall know the exact cost of Charlestown’s first school building.

Before we leave this subject, let us look at the picture that is presented from another point of view. Two hundred and fifty years ago that one little Forge gleamed feebly down by Charlestown City square. The appliances, how crude! But the sparks struck from that rude anvil in the wilderness, struck in the white heat of conviction, have flashed and flown till every hill has been illumined with the brightness and every valley has become a shining track. Huge workshops, in brick and stone, have risen on every hand, but not enough to meet the demand, and the hundreds of anvils ringing, ever ringing, resound the larger life, the larger hope—and the forearm of the state is strengthened, ever strengthened. Listen to the ringing and the singing of the anvils as the sparks fly upward and the wise smith never tires!

The next schoolmaster of whom we have any mention was a Mr. Stow, who, 6: 3 mo. 1651, “is to have what is due to ye Towne from ye Ware and the £5 which the major (Sedgwick) pays for Pellock’s Island the last year 1650, also he is to regr. & take of such persons (as send there children now & then & not constantly) by the Weeke as he and they can agree.” This was

the Rev. Samuel Stow, a graduate of Harvard College in the class of 1645. He was the son of John and Elizabeth (Biggs) Stow, of Roxbury, and was born about 1622. In 1649, at Chelmsford, he married Hope, daughter of William Fletcher. Of their seven children, a son, John, was born in Charlestown June 16, 1650. As early as 1653 he was the minister in Middletown, Ct., and March 22, 1670, he and his two brothers were enumerated among the fifty-two householders and proprietors of that place. In 1681 he seems to have been settled in Simsbury, Ct. Judge Sewall, in a letter dated November 16, 1705, writes that the Rev. Mr. Samuel Stow, of Middletown, went from thence to heaven upon the 8 May, 1704.

"30: 3 mo. 1657. A town rate, amounting to £100, for various purposes, includes an item of £7 'to Mr. Morley, Scholemaster'; said rate is to be made out and collected of the Inhabitants by the Constables." Frothingham (page 155), under date 1659, says that twenty acres in wood and three and one-half acres in commons were assigned to Mr. Morley. Wyman's History informs us that John Morley was the schoolmaster one year from April 26, 1652, and again also in 1657. He, with his wife Constant (Starr), was admitted to the Charlestown church in 1658. He is said to have been the son of Ralph Morley, of Braintree. His mother may have been the widow Catharine Morley "who sojourned thirty weeks with John Greene, of Charlestown, at two shillings and sixpence per week." John Morley died January 24, 1660-1, and in his will bequeathed his estate at Lucas and at Chesthunt Leyes, Hertford county, Eng., first to his wife, and secondly to his sister, Mrs. Ann Farmer. The will of the wife was probated in 1669.

In 1660 one thousand acres of land, in the wilderness, on the western side of Merrimack river, at a place commonly called by the Indians Sodegonock, were laid out by order of the General Court of Massachusetts Colony, for the use of the town of Charlestown. The rental of this tract of land helped to defray the annual expenses of the school.

November 26, 1661, Mr. Ezekiel Cheever entered upon his labors in behalf of the Charlestown grammar school. This

worthy pedagogue of ye olden time later won a deserved reputation as head master of the Boston Latin School, which position he accepted immediately on leaving Charlestown, January 6, 1671. Mr. Cheever was born in London January 25, 1614. He attended the famous Christ's Hospital School in 1626, and entered Emmanuel College, Cambridge, in 1632-3. He came to this country in 1637, was teaching in New Haven in 1638, and in Ipswich from 1650 to the time of his appointment to Charlestown, where his salary was £30 per annum. An increase in salary seems to have been the cause of his going to Boston, for there he received twice that amount. Mr. Cheever died in Boston August 21, 1708, at the advanced age of ninety-four. His connection with the Latin School continued thirty-seven years, and his labors as an instructor of youth covered nearly twice that period. Judge Sewall, in his diary, writes: "August 23, 1708, Mr. Cheever was buried from the schoolhouse." Dr. Cotton Mather preached the funeral sermon, which was printed and re-printed. His body was consigned to the Granary Burial Ground. The book with which Cheever's name, as a writer, is associated is "The Accidence." It was probably written while he lived in New Haven. "It passed through no less than eighteen editions previous to the Revolution, and was used generally as an elementary work. It has done more to inspire young minds with a love of the Latin language than any other work of the kind since the first settlement of the country." Mr. Cheever was twice married, the second time, while living in Ipswich, to Ellen Lathrop (November 18, 1651). When a resident of Charlestown, according to Wyman, his daughter Elizabeth married (1666) S. Goldthwait. There were other children, and his descendants at the present time would be hard to enumerate.

There are not many references to Ezekiel Cheever on the Charlestown records; most of them relate to the payment of his salary, which seems to have been furnished in small amounts, according to the condition of the town treasury. For example: "December 30, 1664. Paid to Mr. Ezekiel Cheever by order fifty shillings in current pay in full payment."

The following reference to the school was during his admin-

istration: "16: 12 mo. 1662. Mr. Thomas Gould and Mr. Solomon Phipps were appointed to run out the lines and bounds of a farm formerly laid out by Court order to maintain Charlestown Schoolhouse."

"17: 12 mo. 1661. It was ordered that Mr. Solomon Phipps should furnish the schoolhouse with severall necessities belonging to the same, and with a house or barn for the housing of the cowes and hay . . . so as the said Solomon and Mr. Cheffer the school-master shall see fitt & of necessity to be done & that the said Solomon shall be paid for his work according to the true value thereof."

12: 11 mo. 1665 (church record). Reference is made to Mr. Cheever's scholars who are required to "sit orderly and constantly in the pews appointed for them together."

"December 19, 1669. Appeared before the selectmen Mr. Cheever desiring a piece of ground or house plott might be granted him whereon to build a house for his family."

Finally, and most interesting of all these entries, November 3, 1666, Mr. Cheever presented the following petition to the selectmen (quoted by Frothingham, page 157):—

1. That they would take care the schoolhouse be speedily amended, because it is much out of repair.

2. That they would take care that his yearly salary be paid, the constables being much behind with him.

3. Putting them in mind of their promise at his first coming to town, viz., that no other schoolmaster should be suffered, or set up in the town so as he could teach the same, yet now Mr. Mansfield is suffered to teach and take away his pupils.

This complaint of good Master Cheever would seem to be proof positive that the chief source of his income was not from the town treasury, but from the pockets of his patrons. We like to think that at this early day there may have been an ambitious boy or two, fired by the zeal of this worthy pedagogue, who sturdily trudged twice a day across the Neck, from some newly-cleared farm in Somerville, to the little schoolhouse on Town Hill.

[To be continued.]

REPORT OF NECROLOGY COMMITTEE.

Somerville, April 6, 1903.

The society mourns the loss of four members by death during the past year: Mrs. Martha Perry Lowe, Martin L. Carr, Mrs. Ernest L. Loring, and Christopher E. Rymes.

A tribute has already been paid to the memory of Mrs. Lowe and Mr. Carr.

Mrs. Loring died February 8, 1903. She had been a member of the society four years.

Mr. Rymes died March 11, 1903. He had been prominently identified with the affairs of this city and with many of its social and benevolent organizations during a long period, serving as a member of both branches of the city government, and for many years as a member of the board of trustees of the Somerville Public Library, and a most valued member and president of the Somerville Water Board. In 1875 he represented this district in the Massachusetts Senate. He was a man of sterling integrity, and conscientious in the discharge of every public duty.

WILLIAM AND GEORGE W. AYERS.

By Captain Martin Binney.

WILLIAM AYERS, of Somerville, was the eldest son of John and Sally (Page) Ayers, of Boston, Mass. Sally Ayers, his mother, subsequently married Joshua Bailey, who died before the war. Mrs. Bailey built the first house on Prescott street, Somerville, near Highland avenue. Her two sons, William and George W. Ayers, both enlisted at the outbreak of the Civil War. William, the subject of this sketch, enlisted in the Somerville company, B, Fifth Regiment, in its "100-day services." He was a faithful soldier until he was sunstruck at or near Little Washington Village, N. C. He was in several engagements and toilsome marches with his regiment, and was a "non compos mentis" for many years, and committed suicide in

1892 by hanging. William Ayers was a United States pensioner at \$50 per month for several years before his death. He was a single man, never married.

George W. Ayers was the second son of John Ayers and Sally (Page) Ayers, of Boston. They had three children, Sallie D. Ayers, the eldest, who married Captain Martin Binney, the writer of this sketch, William Ayers, and George W. Ayers. Their two sons were both in the service during the Civil War. George W. Ayers enlisted for Somerville in Company D, Twenty-fourth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers. He was in several battles in the Army of the Potomac, and was at one time in Fernandina, Fla., and, being a cabinet-maker, he was detailed to make coffins.

In one of the battles in which the regiment was engaged, George W. Ayers was taken prisoner, and was at Macon, Ga., and at Andersonville, where he suffered all the horrors of that prison pen. He was finally exchanged. The prisoners of war in this first exchange of prisoners were in a horrible condition, emaciated and starved. George W. Ayers died from starvation three days after his arrival at the Naval Academy grounds, Annapolis, Md., in 1863. The writer obtained leave of absence, and went to Camp Parole for the purpose of getting him a furlough, but found him dead. The bodies of George W. Ayers and William Ayers are in one grave, and a beautiful stone was erected to their memory by their sister, Sallie (Ayers) Binney.

Officers of Somerville Historical Society.

1903-1904.

President,	John F. Ayer.
First Vice-President,	Luther B. Pillsbury.
Second Vice-President,	Levi L. Hawes.
Third Vice-President,	Oliver Bacon.
Recording Secretary,	Mrs. Elizabeth F. Hammond.
Corresponding Secretary,	Mrs. V. E. Ayer.
Treasurer,	Seth Mason.
Librarian and Curator,	Alfred M. Cutler.

Council-at-Large.

Charles D. Elliot, L. Roger Wentworth, Anna P. Vinal.

Historic Sites.

J. O. Hayden, Chairman, Charles D. Elliot.
Luther B. Pillsbury.

Essays and Addresses.

John F. Ayer, Chairman, Charles D. Elliot,
William E. Brigham, Seth Mason,
Mrs. V. E. Ayer.

Library and Cabinet.

Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman, Levi L. Hawes,
Mrs. Helen M. Heald, Miss Marriette E. Eddy.

Photographs.

Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman, Charles W. Colman,
Albert L. Haskell.

Press and Clippings.

Miss Anna P. Vinal, Chairman, Miss M. Agnes Hunt,
Miss Lucy M. Stone, Miss Mary A. Haley,
Miss Marion Knapp.

Publications.

Sam Walter Foss, Chairman, Frank M. Hawes,
Sara A. Stone, John F. Ayer, *ex-officio*.

Military Records.

Col. Edwin C. Bennett, Chairman, Levi L. Hawes,
John H. Dusseault, Alfred M. Cutler.

House.

Mrs. Elizabeth F. Hammond, Chairman, Mrs. V. E. Ayer,
Mrs. F. De Witt Lapham.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

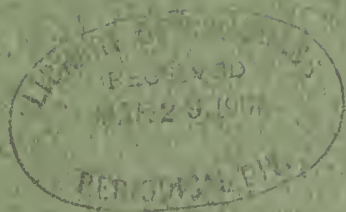
Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1903

Vol. II

No. 2



CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PROF. DAVID LEE MAULSBY.	<i>Frontispiece</i>
LITERARY MEN AND WOMEN OF SOMERVILLE.	
	<i>David Lee Maulsby</i> 1
THE CHARLESTOWN SCHOOL IN THE 17TH CENTURY.	<i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> 32
NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NO. 6.	<i>John F. Ayer</i> 42
WASHINGTON STREET AS IT WAS.	<i>Mrs. O. S. Knapp</i> 46.

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



DAVID LEE MAULSBY.

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. II.

JULY, 1903.

No. 2.

LITERARY MEN AND WOMEN OF SOMERVILLE.

By David Lee Maulsby.

(Continued.)

ASSOCIATED with Mrs. Bacon in the editorship of the Ladies' Repository was Nancy Thorning Munroe, who had indeed begun to contribute to its pages at the age of sixteen. She served as one of the two assistant editors during the term of her sister-in-law's leadership. Mrs. Munroe also contributed to the Rose of Sharon. One of her contributions (1856) has peculiar local interest, since it relates to the people who lived on Prospect Hill near her residence. The yellow house with high steps on Walnut street, fronting Aldersey—a house built by her husband—is where Mrs. Munroe lived for many years. In "Our Model Neighborhood," after discussing what makes good and bad neighbors, the author says of her own environment: "And now, when I would fain describe it, my heart begins to falter. It is not large, though not from any spirit of exclusiveness, be it understood. It is peculiar in many things, and one is this: the children in this model neighborhood never have any trouble. And as the children play together without any trouble, so the parents and older members of the neighborhood live peaceably and quietly. They all have kindly feelings toward each other. If one has good fortune, others rejoice with him and congratulate him. They are like members of one large family; they are so nearly connected that what is a joy to one must be a joy to another, and what is grief to one must be grief to all." Some interesting prose and verse appears from Mrs. Munroe's pen in the

Juvenile Annual called *The Rainbow*, published 1850. One of these contributions is a story about "The Old Pound" of Somerville, a place where stray animals were locked up until redeemed by the owners. Toward the latter part of her life, Mrs. Munroe kept a greenhouse, and used her flowers as suggestions for dialogues of animated nature, called "Talks in My Home."

Mrs. Munroe is described as a brunette of vivacious manner. When she entered a company, she displayed cheerfulness and smiles. Her sense of humor is revealed in an incident connected with the early history of Tufts College. President Ballou, in need of a set of Scott for the college library, sent a humorous rhymed epistle to Mrs. Munroe, who, after gaining the co-operation of the women of the Cross-street Universalist Church, sent him the books desired, accompanied by a rhymed humorous reply.

The first canto of this reply, which is in metre an imitation of Scott's "Marmion," describes the receipt of the president's request, and the anxiety resulting therefrom:—

"A curse within our college walls,
A voice from Walnut Hill here calls,
Sir Walter is not there!
And all the great, the good, the true,
Whose names are known the wide earth thro',
Are up in arms; their fearful ire
Doth shake the walls with curses dire,
And poison all the air."

After the favorable response of her co-workers,

"Calm was the matron's sleep that night,
Hushed were her fears, her bosom light,
And, as she slept, a vision bright
Filled all the ambient air."

The vision presented Sir Walter with his train of characters, in varied picturesqueness, filing upon College Hill, where they were reviewed by the now satisfied "Dominie."

Mrs. Munroe was born in what is now Somerville, married a Somerville man, who, with her, was active in founding the Cross-street Church, and died at her home on Walnut street in 1883, aged sixty-three years.

The *Rose of Sharon* of 1856, containing the prose just quoted, was edited by Mrs. Caroline M. Sawyer. Mrs. Sawyer was a resident of Somerville from 1869 until her death in 1894. During this period she lived at Tufts College, where her husband, Dr. T. J. Sawyer, was connected with the Divinity School—from 1882 as its dean. An interesting genealogical fact is that, five generations back, one Thomas Foxcroft had two sons, who married, respectively, two daughters of John Coney, a goldsmith of Boston, and the man who taught Paul Revere his trade. From one of these marriages descended Phillips Brooks; from the other, Caroline M. Fisher, who became Mrs. Sawyer.

During her long life Mrs. Sawyer was busy in literary activity, contributing prose and verse to the secular and the religious press, and editing in turn the youth's department of the *Christian Messenger*, the *Rose of Sharon*, and the *Ladies' Repository*, in the last office immediately succeeding Mrs. Bacon. In later years she translated Herder's "Leaves of Antiquity," and wrote many poems, some of which remain unpublished. A "Memoir of Mrs. Julia H. Scott" attests long friendship with a fellow worker.

The verse written by Mrs. Sawyer, not to speak of numerous poetical translations, comprises pieces of a personal character, and those more objective in their suggestion. To the latter class belongs a stanza written on the occasion of raising the Stars and Stripes on the Lincoln schoolhouse of Somerville. This may properly be quoted, in view of its local associations:—

"The Flag of our country, the Flag of the free,
The fairest unfurled o'er the land or the sea,
We give thy proud folds to the breeze, while we raise
The cheer to thy glory, the song to thy praise,
For we love thee and know that, wherever unfurled,
The Stars and the Stripes are the hope of the world."

One of the best of Mrs. Sawyer's poems, of this same impersonal sort, is the stanza of fourteen lines that appears in some of its manuscript versions as "Milton Sleeping." It is said that the incident here described did actually occur to the great Puritan poet:—

"In a cool glade the Bard Divine lay sleeping ;
His young face beautiful with grace and power ;
When, through the bosky reach of leaf and flower,
Came, with her maiden-guard, a fair dame weeping.
Startled, she paused, drew near, her soft eyes keeping
Fixed on the Bard's sweet face till, in her breast,
Her young heart melted, and she knelt and prest
A light kiss on his lips, he still a-sleeping.
At this sight grave and startled looks went round
Among the maids, as if they said, 'Can this,
Our high-born lady, thus a stranger kiss?'
But she rose proudly, with reply profound,
'I did but greet a seraph who keeps wait,
With song celestial, at a mortal gate.' "

It is hard to resist the impression that the poem called "A Love Song," although it is not manifestly personal, yet belongs to that pilgrimage of more than sixty years which the writer and her husband were privileged to make in company. One who saw her with him, going home from church, it might be, Sunday after Sunday, cannot shake off the impression of a long life journey, affectionately traveled together. The third stanza of the poem runs as follows:—

"I know there are sorrows and tears, love,
There is night as well as day,
But the sorrows will fade and the tears will dry,
If Love's hand wipe them away.
Then come and be mine, my darling,
And whatever our future bring,
Whatever the storm that may round us beat,
In our hearts 't will be always Spring."

Of the poems manifestly personal, many deal with the losses of life. A religious note is heard in these. For example, the lost little children are remembered in "Doubting and Blessing":—

"I sit beside the window, gazing after
The little feet
That come and go, 'mid bursts of merry laughter,
Along the street.

"But soon, along the winding highway dying,
The voices pass;
I hear, instead, the low wind faintly sighing
Among the grass.

"So years ago—Oh, years how long and weary!
Out from my day
Others as young, as laughing, bright, and cheery,
Vanished away.

"Alas! no children were they of the stranger—
Like these, unknown;
By life's supremest agony and danger
They were my own!

"I gave them birth; my yearning heart kept saying,
'Mid joyful tears,
How they will love me, every pain repaying,
In coming years.

"I fondly watched their growth in strength and beauty
From day to day;
I gently led them in the path of duty
A little way;

"And then they left me!—did I say forever?
O, untrue word!
Will they not be mine own again, where never
Farewells are heard?"

Again, the mother lingers, not altogether with pain, upon the memory of the daughter that left her at life's noon. Years afterward she writes:—

“My tryst was held beside your bed—
A radiant shawl of India's loom,
That seemed to brighten all the room,
A loving hand had o'er you spread ;

“The sunset through the casement streamed,
And lay upon your placid face,
Still wearing all its living grace,
And smile that almost living seemed,

“And children shyly came to fill
Your hands with morning-glories fair,
Low whispering, as they smoothed your hair,
‘Our dearest is so very still!’

“No strange, cold dread their bosoms knew
To overawe the love which led
Their little feet to climb your bed,
That they might closer come to you!

“Dear scene! It lives before me yet!
Alas for them whose memories keep
Of their beloved when they sleep
No picture they would ne'er forget!”

One other extract may be given, to show the essentially religious tendency of Mrs. Sawyer's mind. Toward the close of her life, the retrospect seemed to her to detect too little harvested in the fields of God. Yet will the reaper not despair.

“The night draws near, and I have not compassed
The task by the Gracious Master set ;
Ever and ever by incompleteness
My efforts all have been sore beset.

"The hands grew weary that fain had labored,
Nor asked for rest till their stent was done,
Till now, scarce heeded, their work is lying
Unfinished at nearly the set of sun.

"The brain I trusted has lost its cunning,
And when I look for its wonted aid,
The answer comes in a voice unready,
That leaves me doubting and sore afraid,

"I sought the field in the early morning,
When life was gladsome and hope was high,
And I said, 'I will work with a hand unwearied,
And gather a harvest by and by.'

"But the days and the years in swift succession,
While I was waiting, by me passed;
And when I looked for a golden harvest,
I found but a dreary waste at last!

"Maybe some gleanings may still be waiting
For me to cull, ere Thy call shall come,
So empty-handed I need not enter,
Shame-faced and weeping, the gates of home!

"It will not be long,—the Messenger cometh;
Step by step He is drawing near;
I listen, and seem through the dusky gloaming
Of the Land of Shadows a Voice to hear!

"When It calls my name, I will gladly follow,
Nor fear in the darkness to lose my way;
For Thou, O Master! wilt walk beside me,
And lead me safely to endless day!"

An impression left after one has read much more than can here be quoted is that Mrs. Sawyer, in her most impressionable years, had felt, in connection with many others, that great wave of Romantic tendency that swept about the globe in the days of Byron and Wordsworth. Her poems, notably one called

"Viola," show unmistakable traces of this tendency. Add to this her strong natural affections, and her faithful acceptance of the reality of what is unseen and eternal, and an outline of her poetic thought is indicated. As a wife and mother, she was in her rightful kingdom; as a Christian, despair was upheld by faith; as a writer, her home life and her spiritual experience combined in a natural expression of herself.

[To be continued.]

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOL IN THE 17TH CENTURY.

By Frank Mortimer Hawes.

(Continued.)

MR. BENJAMIN THOMPSON, who had been in charge of the Boston Latin School, for some reason was offered a secondary position in the same, and declined. He gracefully exchanged places with Mr. Cheever. January 30, 1671, the Charlestown records say: "Mr. Benjamin Thompson began to teach the schoole in this Towne." The agreement between him and the selectmen reads as follows:—

1. That he shall be paid £30 per annum by the Towne and to receive 20 shillings a year from each particular scholar that he shall teach, to be paid him by those who send children to him to school.

2. That he shall prepare such youths as are capable of it for the college, with learning answerable.

3. That he shall teach to read, write & cypher.

4. That there shall be half a year's warning given mutually by him and the Town before any change or remove on either side.

The school was in Mr. Thompson's hands until November 7, 1674. It was during this time, May, 1672, that the Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Charlestown, in his election sermon, said: "Let the schools flourish; this is one of the means whereby we have been,

and may still be preserved from a wilde wilderness state through God's blessing upon the same, and from becoming a land of darkness and of the shadow of death. Cherish them therefore and the College in especial."

At this time, also, 17: 2 mo., 1673, "it was voted that the persons hereafter mentioned were appointed to look after ye boys and keep them in order in ye meeting house upon ye Sabbath & Lecture Days, 24 persons being ordered to set two for each month with them." The list included many of the solid men of the town, and a similar vote was passed for several years thereafter.

Mr. Thompson (Tompson) achieved no little distinction as a schoolmaster, physician, town clerk, and even as poet. He was the son of the Rev. William Thompson, and was born in Braintree July 14, 1642. He graduated from Harvard College in 1662, the second in his class, and was appointed to the master's place in the Boston school August 26, 1667. While teaching there, he had among his pupils the celebrated Cotton Mather, and thus "had the honor of helping forward that precocious youth, who, in burdensome gratitude, enlivens his 'Magnalia' by references to his old master's poetry."

After leaving Charlestown, we next find Mr. Thompson teaching in his native town, where he engaged March 3, 1678-9, at a salary of £30. The town is to give him a piece of land to put a house on, and every child is to carry to the schoolmaster one-half cord of wood, besides the quarter money every year. 1688, Mr. Benjamin Thompson, physician and schoolmaster, is mentioned on the Braintree records, and 1696 he is the town clerk of that place. He was keeping school in Roxbury from 1700 to 1704. Mr. Thompson was twice married, first, to Susanna Kirtland, of Lynn, secondly, to Prudence Payson. He died April 13, 1714, in his seventy-second year, leaving eight children and twenty-eight grandchildren. Of these, a daughter, Susanna, was born in Charlestown June 10, 1673. The birth of a daughter, Anna, February 21, 1676, is also assigned to Charlestown. If so, the family must have lived here after his services as schoolmaster had ended.

Benjamin Thompson has been styled by some the first native American poet. His versification was considered smooth and correct. Perhaps his most famous work was "New England's Crisis," a long poem on King Philip's War.

November 16, 1674. "Mr. Thompson, having resigned up his charge in this town as schoolmaster ye 7 instant, this day ye Selectmen, with the advice and consent of the Reverend Mr. Thomas Shepard and Rev. Mr. Joseph Brown, did unanimously agree to give Mr. Samuel Phips, of this Towne, a call to the said work, who was accordingly sent for, & the matter being proposed, viz.: that he should accept of the sd service for half a year upon tryall. For which time he is to instruct Youth in Grammar Learning, & to fit such for ye College who are capable of it as farre as ye time will admit; that he shall also teach to read, write, & cypher. In consideration whereof he shall be allowed £30 per annum from ye Towne & 20 shillings per annum from each schollar taught by him, to be paid by their parents or guardians. All which was accepted by him ye next day, being ye 17 November, and upon the 18 he began to keep school. Attested by Laurence Hammond, Recorder."

A more extended account than has been accorded to his predecessors is due to Samuel Phipps, for without doubt he has the distinction of being the first native of Charlestown to teach in her schools. Then, too, as one of the pioneers in the work, he set the pace for that great army of young men who ever since have trained themselves for the battle of life by first showing the young idea how to shoot.

He was the son of Solomon Phipps, before mentioned, a prominent and useful citizen of that time. His name is the second on the list of those who graduated from Harvard College in 1671. Isaac Foster, also from Charlestown, stood first, and Samuel Sewall (a name distinguished in our Colonial history) came third. The rest of the class, eleven in number, were Samuel Mather, Samuel Danforth, Peter Thacher, William Adams, Thomas Weld, John Bowles, John Norton, and Edward Tylor. In 1680, a year after he entered upon his labors as school teacher, he had fifty-three pupils. His services on Town Hill continued until June, 1684.

Mr. Phipps was thrice married, but the mother of his eleven children appears to have been the second wife, Katherine, daughter of John Brackenbury. He always resided in Charlestown, and, to judge from the records, deserves to be ranked among her most famous citizens. It was here that he joined the church, March 9, 1684. He held all the offices in the gift of his fellow townsmen, serving as constable, town clerk or recorder, town treasurer, selectman, and representative to the General Court. This last distinction he enjoyed, in all, twelve years. He was Clerk of the Courts for Middlesex county from 1689 to 1722, and for a time was Register of Deeds for the same. He also served as captain of the militia. Mr. Phipps died August 7, 1725. His interest in the Charlestown school is evinced from various entries in the records, some of which we quote later on.

Taking up, in chronological order, the various references to the school during the Phipps regime, we learn somewhat of the school fund and of the disciplining of the schoolboys.

January 4, 1875. "Voted that Lotts forfeited to ye Towne be given to a free schoole in Charlestown forever." The same day it was "agreed that Lovell's Island should be & remain to the use of the school in Charlestown forever, and not to be alienated from it to any other use."

January 17, 1675-6. John Cutler, Jr., one of the constables, was thus instructed: "That you allow no boys to sit in any other place in ye meeting house but those appointed for therein, viz., the boys' seats in ye long benches in ye southwest alley, and therefore that you fetch them out of the galleries & from before the Pulpit or elsewhere, & place them in ye place above said.

"That you endeavor to prevent playing & all irrelevant carriage in time of Worship.

"That you prevent there unnecessary frequent running out of ye meeting house in time of exercises, & particularly there running out before prayer be done & ye Blessing pronounced, which is also a particular order from the General Court.

"That you permit them not to sit in time of prayer, but to stand up, & during the whole exercise there hats to be off.

"That you return a list of names of such boys as will not be

reclaimed from there disorders by you, that they may be proceeded with as ye law in yt case directs."

Frothingham, against the year 1679, says: "The ministers complained in their sermons of the general decay of schools, and an effort was made to restore them." This may explain our next extract from the records.

March 10, 1678-9. "At a general meeting of the Inhabitants it was put to a voat to ye inhabitants of this Town whether they would make a free School in this Town by allowing £50 per annum in or as money & a convenient house for a schoolmaster who is to teach Lattin, writing, siphering, & to perfect children in reading English. It was passed with a general voat by ye holding up of their hands, as Attests James Russell, Recorder." The seventh of April following "it was agreed with Mr. Samuel Phips to keepe the Free Schole of this Towne on the terms as was voted at the Towne Meeting (in March), wch is for the Yeare ensuing wch yr begins the 14th of this Instant Aprill. Per John Newell, Recorder."

March 6, 1681-2. "It was agreed with Luke Perkins to inspect ye Youth at the meeting house in time of Worship for this yeare ensuing, for which he is to have £3 for this yeare, one-half money & the other halfe Towne pay, provided he be careful in his office." It thus appears that the fathers were tired of doing police duty on the Sabbath, and were glad to hire a substitute for about a shilling per week! Perhaps the most interesting item that the records furnish us at this time is the account of the building of a new school building, which, as far as we know, was the second schoolhouse erected in Charlestown.

30 March, 1681-2. "Then agreed with the brothers Nathaniel & Samuel Frothingham that they build a sufficient frame for a schoole of 20 ft. square & 8 foot studd within joints with a flatish Roofe and a Turret on it for the bell, and likewise a mantle-tree of 12 foot long, & to raise sd frame by 17th of May next, and to furnish all the carpenter worke about it by the middle of June next. And the Selectmen doth promise to finde them with boards, shingls, and nayls, and to pay them for sd worke thirteen pounds, one-half money. Attest Jno. Newell, Recorder."

Also agreed, April 26, 1682, with Xtopher Goodwin, Jun., "to doe the mason worke belonging to ye new schoolhouse, viz., to build ye Chinnie & underpin ye house, to fill the walls with clay & brick, and to point the roof with lime, he finding all materials belonging to it, as brick, stone, & Lime, etc., etc. Sd Goodwin is to have ye stone & brick of ye old house, & for so doing his worke substantially he is to receive five pounds, one-half money, the other Townies pay."

This new building, built in part, perhaps, from the material of the old, probably stood on or near the same spot as its predecessor, which had done service since 1651. Fifteen years after its erection, 1666, it was "much out of repair," but, thanks to Master Cheever's urging, it was made to do service sixteen years longer. Frothingham, page 185, makes a mistake when he says this new building was only twelve feet square, and "Somerville, Past and Present," has copied the error.

April 3, 1684. "Agreed with Michael Long to inspect the Youth on the Lord's Day & other times of Religious Worship for 25 shillings and 15 shillings in towne pay for one year." From this decrease in salary, may we infer that the duties were growing less arduous?

Mr. Phipps' successor was Mr. Samuel Myles (Miles) who, July 17, 1684, entered upon his labors as master "of the Free School of this Towne." The following contract is dated August 11 of that year:—

"Agreed with Mr. Samuel Miles, schoolmaster, to pay unto him £50 per annum for his faithful performing of that place. By Teaching & p'r'f'ing Youth that are committed to him, wh. sum is to be payd quarterly, the one-half in money, and the other in corn at money price. Likewise to allow him 5 pounds per year for house rent, to be payd in Towne pay, which agreement is to continue for one year."

December 6, 1686. "Mr. Samuel Phipps, as Town Treasurer, is empowered to lay out the 25 pounds money belonging to the Free School, Provided he take sufficient security therefor."

From Sibley's "Harvard Graduates" we learn that the Rev. Samuel Miles was the son of Rev. John Miles, a Baptist preacher,

who, in 1663, formed a society in Rehoboth, the oldest Baptist church in Massachusetts. He died in 1683, while his son Samuel, according to his will, was a student at the college. After graduating in 1687, young Miles continued to teach in Charlestown for a while, for it appears that the town was obliged to pay him his salary up to October of that year. About this time he became an Episcopalian, and we next find him connected with King's Chapel, Boston. In 1692 he visited England and brought away gifts for his chapel left by Queen Mary, then deceased, and also from King William. Some of these substantial evidences of royal favor are still treasured in Boston and elsewhere. In 1698 the wardens of King's Chapel, for the third time, apply to the Bishop of London for an assistant, and, in mentioning Mr. Miles, speak of him in most flattering terms as "well liked of all of us," and as "a good liver and a painful preacher." April 15, 1723, he laid the corner-stone "at ye new North Church." After a ministry of nearly forty years, he died March 4, 1728.

The receipt by which Samuel Myles, of Boston, in Co. of Suffolk, etc., Clerk, for and in consideration of £28 current money pd by Nath'l Dows, of Charlestown, treasurer of said town, doth remise, release, and forever quit claim unto said Town, etc., etc., the amount of its indebtedness to him "from the beginning of the world unto the present time," is a curious specimen of legal writing of that day. It was signed 27 March, 1699, and witnessed by Jno. Cutler and Thomas Parks.

We are not without evidence that the colonists of the stricter sort did not relish any return to Episcopacy. Was it Samuel Myles' influence that caused the May-pole to be set up in Charlestown? Frothingham, page 221, says, under date of May, 1687, "the May-pole was again cut down, and it was noised about that Samuel Phipps, one of the selectmen, led and encouraged the watch to cut it down."

During the Andros persecution Charlestown had its trials along with other communities. Mr. Phipps, too, for a while suffered from unpopularity. Much against his wish, he was appointed constable. August 9, 1686, he complained to the government of the town's action, and asked release from the fine, on

the ground that he was a master of arts and kept a grammar school. He was accordingly excused, but the town rebelled and again chose him to the office. It appears that his excuse was considered a thin one, for, said the people, "if the instruction of two or three youths in a private way in his house, as his other occasions will permit (for his private benefit) in grammar learning, at the desire of their friends, will give him the reputation of keeping a grammar school, so be it."

We have given this incident, not as a piece of historical gossip, but to show that the youth of Charlestown, as in Cheever's time, did not get their education wholly from the Town Hill school.

April 20, 1691. "Agreed with Mr. Jno. Emerson to be schoolmaster in this Towne for the education of Youth, viz., in Lattin, writing, ciphering, and perfecting in English, & for encouragement in sd work, the Selectmen promise the sd schoolmaster, Mr. Emerson, 25 pounds per annum, one-half money & the other half as money. And such Youth as do enter under sd schoolmaster his Tutorage, they are to pay as he and their parents or overseers do agree for, and as to some poor children that may come, as sd Mr. Emerson and the Selectmen may agree therein, and the above sd twenty-five pounds is to be payd quarterly from May the 4th following."

May 9, 1695. "Voted that what is rising annually upon the account of the school in this Town shall be payd annually to a schoolmaster, & no more towards keeping a gramer & writing school, and the sd schoolmaster to have the benefit of the scholars to make up his sallary, and the management thereof to be left to the selectmen."

December 7, 1696. "Then ordered the Town Treasurer to pay Mr. John Emerson, schoolmaster, besides the Rent of Lovels Iland, 8 pounds as he had Last Yeare."

November 2, 1697. "Then ordered Town Treasurer to pay for a bushel of Lime to repaire the school house."

February 1, 1698. "To Xtopher Goodwin for work at the Schoolhouse, and to Mr. Emerson 8 pounds."

May 17, 1698. "Let unto Josiah Treadway the land for-

merly for the school fenced in and improved by the schoolmaster. It being all the land belonging to the Towne from the lower end of the schoolhouse on a straight line to Timothy Cutler's barn, containing 30 rod, more or less, for a term of seven years, 5 shilling for the first year, and 10 shilling per yeare thereafter."

January 6, 1698-9. "Xtopher Goodwin, for work at schoolhouse (4-6) four and sixpence."

January 23, 1698. Treasurer's account:—

Mr. John Emerson, Dr.

To Rent of Lovell's Is., £10.

To Money pd being for year 1697, £8.

To Rent for the Island, £10.

To money being rent for school land, £8.

Total, £36.

From the Emerson Genealogy we learn that Rev. John Emerson, of the class of 1675 (Harvard), was the son of Nathaniel² (Thomas¹) Emerson. He was born in Ipswich, 1654, and died in Salem February 24, 1712. His grave is in the Charter street burying ground. He served as a chaplain in the Indian Wars, and taught school at Newbury, Charlestown, and Salem. August 25, 1699, the selectmen of Salem called him from Charlestown, at a salary of £50, to teach Greek, Latin, writing, cyphering, and to perfect such in reading as can read a chapter competently well. The following regulations at Salem were, doubtless, not unlike those in other communities at that day. The school bell was to be rung at 7 a. m. and 5 p. m. from March 1 to November 1, and at 8 a. m. and 4 p. m. from November 1 to March 1. School was to begin and end accordingly! Comment and comparisons with present-day methods are unnecessary.

Mr. Emerson married, in 1699, Sarah, widow of John Carter, and daughter of Richard and Joanna Stowers, of Charlestown. A daughter, Sarah, born to them August, 1695, married Hon. Richard Foster, Jr. (nephew of Isaac and grandson of William and Anne [Brackenbury] Foster). Through his wife, Mr. Emerson's name is connected with numerous real estate transactions in Charlestown. His widow long survived him.

March 4, 1699-00. "Voted that the selectmen, with Mr.

Samuel Phipps & Lt. Eleazer Phillips, be a committee to bargain and agree with a gramer schoolmaster for the yeare to keep a free school & the Selectmen to Raise by way of Rate on the Inhabitants what shall be wanting beside what is already given for that use to make up the sallery that shall be agreed upon to be given to sd schoolmaster."

March 8. "Agreed that Mr. Samuel Phipps & Lt. Eleazer Phillips go to Cambridge or elsewhere & inform themselves by the best advice they can get of a suitable person for a schoolmaster, & if they see meet to agree with one, this to be done with all expedition."

This unseemly haste is explained, perhaps, by a reference in Hutchinson Collection, page 553. Frothingham says, page 214, "So watchful were the public authorities of the common schools that in 1691 Charlestown was presented to the county court for its neglect, while it was in search of a competent teacher, and only saved itself from a penalty by a quick bargain."

May 22, 1700. "According to vote in March the selectmen and committee agreed with Mr. Thomas Swan to keep the school in this Towne, to teach children belonging to this towne Lattin, writeing, scifering, & to perfect them in Reading English, & forthwith to enter upon said work & continue for the space of one whole yeare from the day of the date hereof. In consideration of which service, faithfully performed, it was agreed that he be paid £40 money for the year, to be paid quarterly. Nathl Dowse, Recorder."

Various orders to the town treasurer to pay Mr. Swan are found upon the books, the most interesting being that of October 27, 1702: "To Mr. Thomas Swan 15 shillings money disbursed by him for wood for the schooling of pore children."

Thus ends the account of Charlestown school in the first century of our history. It remains to add that, at the opening of the eighteenth century (Frothingham, page 243), at annual meeting in March, it was voted, if there should be a county school settled by the General Court, that this Town would raise £40, in order to provide for it, if it be settled in this town. Apparently nothing ever came of this.

Neal's "New England," page 613, asserts that there was hardly a child of nine or ten years old throughout the whole country at this time but could read and write and say his catechism. If this be true, from the account which we have attempted to present, it may be judged whether Charlestown was faithful or not to its duty.

(To be continued.)

NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NO. 6. MEDFORD AND WALNUT STREETS.

By John. F. Ayer.

IN 1858 I located on Medford street, where Chester avenue and Medford Street unite; the house, since remodeled, is now owned by Mr. Sears Condit. It was a two-story, flat-roof structure, and connected with it there was a large lot of land, with several apple trees.

On the adjoining land, north, stood the Hearse house, also the Town Pound, both of which disappeared when the Brastow schoolhouse was built on the land—as did the schoolhouse itself a few years later, when the location was wanted for the Central fire station.

Chester avenue did not exist at that time, but it was opened a few years later, when the several houses that front toward the railroad were built.

There were three houses only on this portion of Barberry Lane, the one I occupied, the one owned and occupied by John W. Mandell next east of it, and a third one adjoining Mandell, owned and occupied by Charles Bird, Jr.

Mandell afterward located on Prescott street as a florist, while Bird drifted to Chelsea and became an auctioneer.

Northwest from us, along Medford street, there was no house until you came to Captain Brown's, near Central street. Opposite Brown, or a little further along, about where Ames street is, stood a small farmhouse and barn.

A little more to the north of Medford street stood the home of Charles E. Gilman on Walnut street, also an old house opposite his, both of which are still standing.

Mr. Gilman was about fifty years old at this time, and his farm of several acres extended northerly nearly to Gilman square, and southerly about the same distance, Gilman street being laid out through his land.

Gilman was a messenger, I think, in the New England Bank in Boston, going and returning over the Lowell railroad each morning and afternoon, attending to his duties as town clerk all the while.

Next along Walnut street northerly was William Veazie, whose house was in plain view from our windows. The first house he built was burned before completion, the second one—now standing—was guarded every night while being constructed. A supposed incendiary was shot one night by the watchman on duty.

In the rear of Veazie was a farm owned by Abraham M. Moore, whose buildings were in plain view; his land opened on to Walnut street, and also onto what is now Bonair street. There was a stone quarry on his premises, in the rear of Veazie, furnishing the familiar blue ledge stone for cellar walls so well known to all builders.

Along Walnut street, adjoining Moore, Edward Cutter—young Ned Cutter, as he was called—owned to Broadway; the house on Walnut street is still standing.

Cutter was a dissipated fellow, told big stories which few believed, was quite successful as a fruit-grower, however, and his extensive pear orchard will be long remembered by the older citizens of the town.

Opposite Cutter, on Walnut street, was the Skilton place. John, a bachelor, and very deaf, was for many years treasurer of the Warren Institution for Savings in Charlestown, and George, his brother, engaged in his first efforts at pickle and rhubarb wine making, occupied the house, which is still standing.

Next south of the Skiltons was a small farm of a Mrs. Moore, two or three acres, afterward owned by Samuel Mills, who opened

up the street of that name—the same that has recently been re-named Sargent avenue—into which it opened at right angles.

Fitch Cutter owned a tract of grass land to the south of the Mills estate, and on Walnut street there were no houses between Mills and Town Clerk Gilman, on the westerly side.

Directly northeast from our house, there were few, if any, houses between us and Broadway. Mr. Samuel D. Hadley, a music teacher (father of S. Henry Hadley), built a house on Everett avenue, the first one in that vicinity, about 1859 or 1860. Seemingly, he was away off in the pasture, for none of the streets, Otis, Auburn avenue, Bonair, Pearl, Flint, or Gilman, had been opened at this time. It was all grass or pasture land from Cross to Walnut to School street, and beyond to Sycamore. With the exception of the few mentioned on Walnut street, no buildings stood until you came to the Forster schoolhouse—a wooden structure on Sycamore street—but away to the right of it, along Broadway, could be seen the few houses which existed at that time. Marshall, Dartmouth, and Thurston streets were not in existence.

Looking still further toward the east across the fields to where Mt. Pleasant street and Perkins street are only a few houses could be seen; the John Runey house and the Pottery buildings on the northerly side of Cross street, about where Flint street is, the houses of Charles Williams, Horace Runey, a Mr. Appleton, and two or three others along that part of Cross street, and then no buildings till you reached the Galletly Rope Walk, the Towne residence and hot houses off Washington street, the Bailey and Guild houses on Perkins street, with possibly two or three others near by.

All between Perkins and Cross streets was pasture land, and one would let down the bars near Mt. Vernon street, on Perkins, and walk unmolested to a point opposite the Runey pottery, where, letting down another set of bars, he would find himself on Cross street. Clay pits were numerous along Oliver street, between Franklin street and Glen. Winter evenings we could see the bonfires lighted by the skaters, and hear their voices plainly.

Of the near-by neighbors, I recall Charles Munroe and James

S. Runey, who lived opposite us, Frank Russell, whose place adjoined the Munroe estate, forming the corner of Greenville street, and near by, on the opposite side of Greenville street, was the Alexander Wood place.

At the junction of Highland avenue and Medford street was the John Bolton homestead, and opposite Bolton, on Highland avenue, was the farm of Ira Thorp.

Mr. Munroe was prematurely old, had retired from business, and could be found generally about his place or along the street. He was a little lame, carried a stout cane, and moved about cautiously. He was a genial, sociable fellow, and his hearty greeting and loud laughter I recall with pleasure.

James S. Runey was with his brother John in the pottery business on Cross street. He was a quiet, kindly, home-loving man, it seemed to me; his widow, Mrs. Maria M. Runey, is still living in the Munroe house with her sister, Miss Louisa Munroe.

Frank Russell was a well-known resident; everybody knew him. Like his neighbor Munroe, he had retired from active business. He and Charles H. North had been in the pork packing business together for some years; he had been in the boot and shoe business, also.

He owned the triangle bounded by Chester avenue, Cross street, and Medford street, and property in other places, as well. His home partook of the well-to-do country type, and he is well remembered by the older people.

The place has gone out of the family, but remains much the same as in the early days.

Mr. Bolton occupied the premises bounded by Walnut street, Highland avenue, and Medford street, one of the best locations for a home in Somerville. He had a fine house, with ample grounds, was an engraver in Boston, a tall man, somewhat grey, intelligent, well-to-do. The land has been divided up and built over. The house has disappeared.

Ira Thorp, quite an old man, rather under size, thin and stooping, a good neighbor, was the typical milkman of the vicinity. He produced milk, and dispensed it to the neighbors straight. His house was at the corner of Walnut street and

Highland avenue. The barn was on the line of Walnut street, a great trough outside it, where the fresh milk in cans was placed to cool. He pastured his cows across the way from the barn, where they had ample range.

Both house and barn have long since disappeared, his holdings are now covered with residences, but he will be long remembered and often talked about by the old-time families in this locality.

WASHINGTON STREET AS IT WAS.

By Mrs. O. S. Knapp.

WASHINGTON street has always been a much-traveled thoroughfare, and was the first street laid out in the early settlement of the place. I will write briefly of the houses and their occupants as I remember them from Union square to Medford street on the northerly side of Washington.

Three houses have been moved, viz.: the house owned by the Stone family, that stood near the present site of the Stone building, was moved several years ago to make room for business purposes.

Both the Prospect Hill and Pope schoolhouses are located where dwelling-houses once stood. Mr. Bonner, who lived where the Prospect Hill schoolhouse now stands, moved his house up the hill on Bonner avenue. A family by the name of Harrington lived where the Pope schoolhouse is located.

Next below where we lived was the old Shedd place, known to Revolutionary fame, as a British soldier was killed in the house on the retreat from Lexington. I do not remember the name of the family who lived there in my childhood days. It was a pretty cottage, set well back from the street, surrounded by overgrown and untrained shrubbery, giving it a romantic and pleasing appearance. The place was sold some years since to Mr. Walker, who so enlarged and altered it that one could never recognize the original dwelling.

A few rods from the Shedd place Mrs. Frost lived. Her house stood near the street. A social-looking pump in front, with dipper attached, invited the thirsty traveler to stop for a cooling draught as he passed by. This house, also, has yielded to the pressure of business, the front of it having been built out for stores.

The substantial looking house now owned and occupied by George Haven, situated near the corner of Washington and Medford streets, has changed very little in its external appearance. My earliest recollections of the place are of a family by the name of Pritchard living there, but they did not remain very long.

The three remaining houses to be spoken of are clearer to my memory than any of the others. The house occupied by David Sanborn, father of David Sanborn who resides on Prospect street, stands near Union square. Adjoining this is the one then occupied by "Grandma" Bonner, sister of the elder Mrs. Sanborn, and mother of William Bonner, who moved his house up the hill.

In the third house, just east of the Prospect Hill school-house, my father, Joseph Clark, lived. These three houses are in possession of the original families, the descendants of two of them (Mrs. Bonner's and my father's) occupying them. Although the years have not passed by without leaving their marks on them, and the lovely, old-fashioned flower gardens belonging to them have long since gone, they wear a natural, old-time look, and stand as landmarks to those who were familiar with Somerville when it was set off from Charlestown.

Officers of Somerville Historical Society.

1903-1904.

President,	John F. Ayer.
First Vice-President,	Luther B. Pillsbury.
Second Vice-President,	Levi L. Hawes.
Third Vice-President,	Oliver Bacon.
Recording Secretary,	Mrs. Elizabeth F. Hammond.
Corresponding Secretary,	Mrs. V. E. Ayer.
Treasurer,	Seth Mason.
Librarian and Curator,	Alfred M. Cutler.

Council-at-Large.

Charles D. Elliot,	L. Roger Wentworth,	Anna P. Vinal.
--------------------	---------------------	----------------

Historic Sites.

J. O. Hayden, Chairman,	Charles D. Elliot.
	Luther B. Pillsbury.

Essays and Addresses.

John F. Ayer, Chairman,	Charles D. Elliot,
William E. Brigham,	Seth Mason,
	Mrs. V. E. Ayer.

Library and Cabinet.

Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman,	Levi L. Hawes,
Mrs. Helen M. Heald,	Miss Marriette E. Eddy.

Photographs.

Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman,	Charles W. Colman,
	Albert L. Haskell.

Press and Clippings.

Miss Anna P. Vinal, Chairman,	Miss M. Agnes Hunt,
Miss Lucy M. Stone,	Miss Mary A. Haley,
	Miss Marion Knapp.

Publications.

Sam Walter Foss, Chairman,	Frank M. Hawes,
Sara A. Stone,	John F. Ayer, <i>ex-officio</i> .

Military Records.

Col. Edwin C. Bennett, Chairman,	Levi L. Hawes,
John H. Dusseault,	Alfred M. Cutler.

House.

Mrs. Elizabeth F. Hammond, Chairman,	Mrs. V. E. Ayer,
	Mrs. F. De Witt Lapham.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

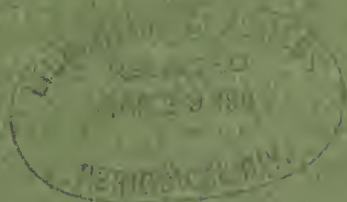
Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1903

Vol. II

No. 3



CONTENTS.

	PAGE
MIDDLESEX CANAL AND MEDFORD TURNPIKE, RUINS OF THE CONVENT IN THE DISTANCE.	<i>Frontispiece</i>
HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE OLD MIDDLESEX CANAL.	<i>Herbert Pierce Yeaton</i> 49
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS IN THE 18TH CENTURY.	<i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> 58
LITERARY MEN AND WOMEN OF SOMERVILLE.	<i>David Lee Maulsby</i> 66

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



MIDDLESEX CANAL AND MEDFORD TURNPIKE, RUINS OF THE CONVENT IN THE DISTANCE.

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. II.

OCTOBER, 1903.

No. 3.

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE OLD MIDDLESEX CANAL.

By Herbert Pierce Yeaton.

NAVIGATION ON THE MERRIMAC RIVER.

THE CANALS of the Merrimac River had their day and active existence in the first half of the last century.

They have been referred to as the earliest step towards a solution of the problem of cheap transportation between Boston and the northern country; but perhaps they may be more properly classed as the second step in that direction, the turnpikes having been in the field.

James Sullivan and his associates, the original projectors of the canal system, undoubtedly had in mind, not only to connect Boston with the Merrimac River country, but also to extend their canals from the Merrimac to the Connecticut River, and from the Connecticut River to Lake Champlain, and through its outlet to the St. Lawrence, thus bringing Boston into inland water communication with Montreal and the lower Canada.

The project was too vast, and the physical obstacles too formidable to admit of full consummation, and their labors resulted only in uniting by navigable water the capitals of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, covering a distance of about eighty-five miles.

The Middlesex Canal, twenty-seven miles long, from Boston to the Merrimac River at what is now known as Middlesex Village, about two miles above Lowell, was the first constructed. The work on this was commenced in 1794, and completed and opened for public use in 1803. Following the construction of the Middlesex Canal came the requisite work to render the

Merrimac River navigable; from the head of the canal to Concord, N. H., being a series of dams, locks, and short canals to overcome the natural rapids and falls of the river.

The first of these works was a lock and short canal at Wiscassee Falls, three miles above the head of the Middlesex Canal and what is now known as Tyngs Island. No fall is now perceptible at that point, the Lowell dam having flowed it out. The second work, fifteen miles further up, at Cromwell's Falls, consisted of a dam and single lock. Then came dams and single locks at Moor's, Coos', Goff's, Griffin's and Merrill's Falls. About a mile above Merrill's Falls were the lower locks of the Amoskeag, a canal next in importance to the Middlesex Canal. It was only about a mile in length, but surmounted by works of very considerable magnitude, where the great fall of between fifty and sixty feet now furnishes the water power for the mills at Manchester. The contract was first undertaken by Samuel Blodgett in 1794, and not completed until 1807.

Eight miles above Amoskeag the locks and short canal at Hooksett overcame a fall of some seventeen and one-half feet; further up the Bow locks and canal afforded the final lift of twenty-seven feet to the level of the navigable water of the Merrimac at Concord.

Short side canals with locks were subsequently built at the junction of the Nashua and Piscataquog Rivers with the Merrimac, to facilitate the passage of boats from the Merrimac to the storehouse in Nashua and Piscataquog villages.

For forty years this line of canals formed the principal channel of heavy transportation between the two capitals, and except that the canals did not effectually compete with the stages for carrying passengers, they held the same position to transportation as is now held by their successor and destroyer—the railroad.

During the entire season of open river, from the time that the spring break-up of ice permitted navigation to commence until the frosts of fall again closed it, this eighty-five miles of water was thronged with boats taking the products of the country to a market and the New England metropolis, and returning

loaded with salt, lime, cement, plaster, hardware, leather, liquors, iron, glass, grindstones, cordage, paints, oils and all the infinite variety of merchandise required by country merchants formerly classed under the general terms of "Dry West India goods."

The construction of these canals was a great undertaking in that day. Boston was a town of only about 20,000. Neither Lowell nor Manchester had been commenced, and Nashua was a small place without manufacturing, and Concord was a country village.

The Merrimac Canals were blotted out by the railroad. The opening of the Lowell road in 1835, to Nashua in 1838, and to Concord in 1842, were successive steps of destruction to the whole system of river navigation, and culminated in the total abandonment of the canal soon after the Concord railroad was put in operation.

A hardy race of boatmen, pilots, and raftsmen—men of uncommon strength and endurance, skilled in their calling, but unfamiliar with other labors—were suddenly thrown out of employment. The wooden dams and locks went to decay, the embankments were cut and plowed down, and successive spring freshets have hurled their icy batteries against the stone abutments and lock walls until they are nearly obliterated, and the next generation will not know of them.

THE MIDDLESEX CANAL.

The observant traveler on the Boston & Lowell Railroad, now the Southern Division of the Boston & Maine, between Woburn and Billerica, may see a broad ditch filled with a sluggish stream of water. He is told, perhaps, that this was once a portion of the Old Middlesex Canal; with the words come a swift vision of a silvery ribbon of water lying between cultivated meadows and bordered by velvety lawns and shaded woodland. On its bosom he sees the canal-boat, moving forward with easy, quiet dignity, appropriate to the time when leisure was still allowable. The vision is quickly dispelled by the rush and roar of the train sweeping on to its destination, as the canal itself was obliterated by the growth of steam power. It may, perhaps, help

to an appreciation of the vast changes which accompanied this transition if we will remember that, roughly speaking, the Middlesex Canal belongs to the first half of the nineteenth century, while the railroad belongs to the latter half of that period.

In the month of May, 1793, a certain number of gentlemen assembled for the purpose of "opening a canal from the waters of the Merrimac, by Concord River or in some other way, through the waters of Mystic River to the town of Boston." There were present at this meeting the Hon. James Sullivan, who was at this time attorney general, and later governor of Massachusetts, and in whose fertile mind the idea originated; Benjamin Hall, Willis Hall, Ebenezer Hall, Jonathan Porter, Loammi Baldwin, a leader in the enterprise and superintendent of construction, Ebenezer Hall, Jr., Andrew Hall, and Samuel Swan, Esq. After organizing by the choice of Benjamin Hall as chairman, and Samuel Swan, Esq., as clerk, the Hon. James Sullivan, Loammi Baldwin, and Captain Ebenezer Hall were chosen a committee to attend the General Court, in order to obtain an Act of Incorporation, with suitable powers relating to the premises. In conformity with this vote, a petition was presented to the General Court, and a charter obtained incorporating James Sullivan, Esq., and others, by the name of the Proprietors of the Middlesex Canal, bearing date June 22, 1793, and on the same day signed by His Excellency, John Hancock, Governor of the Commonwealth. By this charter the proprietors were authorized to lay assessments from time to time as might be required for the construction of said canal. It was further provided that the proprietors might hold real estate to the value of \$30,000 over the value of the canal; also to render Concord River boatable as far as Sudbury Causeway, through Billerica, Carlisle, Bedford, Concord, to Sudbury, a distance of twenty-three miles. This formed a portion of Mr. Sullivan's far-reaching plan for inland waterways, extending well into the interior of Massachusetts, and by way of the Merrimac River to Concord, New Hampshire, through Lake Sunapee to the Connecticut River, at Windsor, and thence to the St. Lawrence River. This seemed a good and practical plan, and if the railroad had been delayed

ten years, would undoubtedly have been realized; and further to extend the canal from Medford to Boston, the original intention to have the eastern limit at Medford. By an act of June 25, 1798, the proprietors were allowed to hold mill property.

At the first meeting of the proprietors, after the choice of James Sullivan as moderator, and Samuel Swan as clerk, the following votes were passed, viz.:—

That the Hon. James Sullivan, Hon. James Winthrop, and Christopher Gore, Esq., be a committee to arrange the business of the meeting, which they reported in the following order:—

Voted: That the business of the corporation be transacted by a committee annually elected, consisting of thirteen directors, who shall choose their President and Vice-President out of their own number.

Voted: That the Hon. James Sullivan, Loammi Baldwin, Esq., the Hon. Thomas Russell, Hon. James Winthrop, Christopher Gore, Esq., Joseph Barrell, Esq., Andrew Craigie, Esq., Hon. John Brooks, Captain Ebenezer Hall, Jonathan Porter, Esq., Ebenezer Storer, Esq., Caleb Swan, and Samuel Jaques be directors for pursuing the business of the canal for the present year.

At the meeting of the directors on October 11, the following vote was passed:—

Voted: That the Hon. James Sullivan be president, Loammi Baldwin, Esq., first vice-president, and Hon. John Brooks, second vice-president.

The Board of Directors being duly organized, the next duty was to commence the necessary surveys of the most eligible route between Medford River, Chelmsford, and the Concord River. Here the committee were met by an almost insurmountable difficulty; the science of Civil Engineering was almost unknown to anyone in this part of the country. They were, however, determined to persevere, and appointed Mr. Samuel Thompson, of Woburn, who began his work, and proceeded from Medford River, following up the river to Mystic Pond, through the pond and Symms' River to Horn Pond in Woburn, and through said pond to the head thereof.

Meeting here bars they could neither let down nor remove, they went back to Richardson's Mill on Symms' River, and passed up the valley through the east part of Woburn to Wilmington, and found an easy and very regular ascent until they reached the Concord River, a distance traveled, as the surveyor says, "From Medford Bridge to the Billerica Bridge, about twenty-three miles, and the ascent he found to be, from Medford River to the Concord River, sixty-eight and one-half feet." The actual elevation, when afterwards surveyed by a practical engineer, was found to be 104 feet. By the original survey from Billerica to Chelmsford, the surveyor says, "The water we estimate in the Merrimac River at sixteen and one-half feet above that at Billerica Bridge, and the distance six miles," when in fact the water at Billerica Bridge is about twenty-five feet above the Merrimac at Chelmsford. This report shows one of the many difficulties the directors had to contend with for the want of requisite scientific knowledge. It will be seen that the Concord was thus at the summit of the canal, and able to supply water in both directions. It will be seen later how this fact was further utilized in the attempt to form an aqueduct of the canal.

On the first day of March, 1794, the directors passed a vote appointing Loammi Baldwin, Esq., to repair to Philadelphia and endeavor to obtain the services of Mr. Samuel Weston, a distinguished English engineer, then in this country working in the Potomac canals. If he cannot come, then that he endeavor to obtain some other person who shall be recommended by Mr. Weston, and that said agent be authorized to write to Europe for some suitable person for the undertaking, if none can be found elsewhere.

Colonel Baldwin made a lengthy and able report on the twelfth day of May, 1794. Among other things, he says he has engaged Mr. Weston to make the survey of the route in the month of June, and closes his report as follows: "I consider the prospects before us in this undertaking much more flattering, in respect to the execution of the work in proportion to the extent, than any I have seen in the Southern states, the Washington canal excepted."

About the fifteenth of July Mr. Weston arrived, and a committee, consisting of Loammi Baldwin and Samuel Jaques, was appointed "to attend him during his survey and observations relating to the canal." The survey was completed, and a full report made by Mr. Weston on the second day of August, 1794. The survey made by Samuel Thompson was the one selected forty years later for the Boston & Lowell Railroad.

Agents were then immediately appointed to carry on the work, to commence at Billerica Mills on the Concord River, and first complete the level to the Merrimac at North Chelmsford. Colonel Baldwin, who superintended the construction of the canal, removed the first turf on the tenth of September, 1794. The season having so far advanced, but little could be done until the next spring except to purchase material and make contracts for future operations. The purchase of land from more than 100 proprietors demanded skillful diplomacy. Most of the lands acquired were by voluntary sale and conveyed in fee-simple to the corporation, sixteen lots were taken by authority of the Court of Sessions, while for thirteen others neither deed nor record could be found when the corporation came to an end. Some of the land was never paid for, as the owners refused to accept the sum awarded. The compensation for the land taken ranged from \$150 per acre, in Medford, to \$25 per acre in Billerica. The progress was slow and attended with many embarrassments, and was prosecuted with great caution from the commencement to the year 1803, at which time the canal was so far completed as to be navigable from the Merrimac to the Charles River, the first boat, however, being actually run over a portion of the canal on April 22, 1802.

Delays and great expense were incurred for many years, owing to imperfections in the banks and other parts of the work; and about the whole income was expended in additions, alterations, and repairs, and no dividend could be or was declared until February 1, 1819. From the year 1819 to the time the Boston & Lowell road went into operation, the receipts regularly increased, so that the dividends arose from \$10 to \$30 per share; and no doubt in a few years without competition they would

have given a handsome interest on the original cost. These were palmy days. In 1832 the canal people declared a dividend of \$22, and from 1834 to 1837, inclusive, a yearly dividend of \$30. The year the road went into operation, in 1835, the receipts of the canal were reduced one-third, and when the Nashua & Lowell road went into operation in 1838, they were reduced another third, and up to the year 1843 they were not sufficient to cover the expenditures for repairs and current expenses. The future had a gloomy prospect.

As the enterprise had the confidence of the business community, money for prosecuting the work had been procured with comparative ease. The stock was divided into 800 shares, and among the original holders appear the names of Ebenezer and Dudley Hall, Oliver Wendell, John Adams, of Quincy, Peter Brooks, of Medford, and Andrew Craigie, of Cambridge. The stock had steadily advanced from \$25 per share in the fall of 1794 to \$473 per share in 1803, the year after the canal was opened, and touching \$500 in 1804. Then a decline set in, a few dollars at a time, until 1816, when its market value was \$300 per share, with few takers, although the canal was in successful operation; and in 1814 the obstructions in the Merrimac River had been remedied so that canal boats locking into the river at Chelmsford had been poled up the stream as far as Concord, New Hampshire.

Firewood and lumber always formed a very considerable item in the business of the canal. The Navy Yard at Charlestown and the ship yards on the Mystic River for many years relied on the canal for the greater part of the timber used in ship-building, and work was sometimes seriously retarded by low water in the Merrimac, which interfered with transportation. The supply of oak and pine about Lake Winnepesaukee and along the Merrimac River and its tributaries was thought to be practically inexhaustible. In the opinion of Daniel Webster, the value of this timber had been increased \$5,000,000 by the canal. Granite from Tyngsboro and agricultural products from a great extent of fertile country found their way along this channel to Boston, while the return boats supplied taverns and country stores with their annual stock of goods.

Yet, valuable, useful, and productive as the canal had proved itself, it had lost the confidence of the public, and with a few exceptions of the proprietors themselves. The reason of this is easily shown. The general depression of business on account of the Embargo and War of 1812 had its effects on the canal. In the deaths of Governor Sullivan and Colonel Baldwin in 1808, the enterprise was deprived of the wise and energetic counsellors to whom it owed its existence. Lotteries were deemed necessary as a means to raise money, and in 1816 the canal was voted financial aid. Constant expense was being incurred in the repairing of damages from breaks and the settling of the bed. Four directors were in charge, no one of them in full authority; tolls were uncollected, canal boats were detained, for weeks sometimes, till the owners were ready to unload them. After the death of Governor Sullivan, his son, John Langdon Sullivan, a stockholder in the company, and an engineer and business man, was appointed agent. He compelled the payment of tolls in cash before goods were delivered, charged demurrage on goods not promptly removed, caused repairs to be promptly and thoroughly made, and so improved the business that in 1810 receipts rose to \$15,000, and kept on increasing until in 1816 they were \$32,000. In 1819 the first dividend was paid, the assessments at that time amounting to \$1,455.25 per share on 800 shares, a total expense of \$1,164,200.

The aqueducts and most of the locks being built of wood required large sums for annual repairs, the expenses arising from imperfections in the banks and the erection of toll houses and public houses for the accommodation of the boatmen were considerable, but the heaviest expenses were incurred in opening the Merrimac River for navigation.

From Concord, New Hampshire, to the head of the canal at Middlesex Village, the river has a fall of 123 feet, necessitating various locks and canals. The Middlesex Canal contributed to the building of the Wiscassee locks and canals at Tyngs Island \$12,000; Union locks and canal. \$49,932; Hooksett canal, \$6,750; Bow canal and locks, \$14,115; making a total of \$82,797 to be paid from the income of the canal.

The canal as built was twenty-seven and one-quarter miles long, thirty feet wide at the surface, eighteen feet wide at the bottom, and four feet deep, with seven aqueducts over rivers and streams, twenty locks, and crossed by fifty bridges. Four of the levels were five miles each in extent, the rest of from one to three miles each. The total cost to 1803 was \$528,000, of which one-third was for land damages. Much of the work was done by contract. Laborers received about \$8 per month wages, and carpenters from \$10 to \$15 per month. The locks were eleven feet wide and seventy-five feet long, with an average lift of about seven feet, some being built of wood and others of stone. In the wooden locks the outside walls were of stone, the space between the inner and outer walls being packed with earth. In this way expensive masonry was avoided, though the cost of maintenance in after years was increased.

[To be continued.]

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS IN THE 18TH CENTURY.

By Frank Mortimer Hawes.

[Continued.]

AT THE BEGINNING of the eighteenth century the Charlestown School, as we have shown, was under the charge of Thomas Swan, M. A. This gentleman was a graduate of Harvard College in the class of 1689. He was born in Roxbury, September 15, 1669, and was the son of Dr. Thomas and Mary (Lamb) Swan, of that town. In 1690 he was teaching in Hadley. After resigning at Charlestown he became Register of Probate for Middlesex County. December 27, 1692, he married Prudence, daughter of Jonathan Wade, Jr., of Medford, and they had four children, the births of three of whom were recorded in Charlestown. Mr. Swan died at the Castle in Boston Harbor, October 19, 1710, aged 41 years. "He did practise

physick & chyrurgerye at Castle William upward of 7 years, at 12 pence per week for every 20 soldiers garrisoned there." His widow applied to the court for the payment of a sum of money which was her husband's due, and 20 pounds was voted in settlement of the demand.

For his services in Charlestown Mr. Swan received the same remuneration (£40) that was paid at the beginning of the previous century. We have shown how this amount fluctuated from time to time. On account of a varying income arising from the school fund, it is hard to determine always what was the yearly cost of the school. The master's salary sometimes included the rent of a house for his family; sometimes he was allowed to demand of his pupils a small tuition fee. Wood for the schoolhouse, in winter, was pretty generally supplied throughout all New England towns by the pupils' parents. The sum total of the master's earnings seems meagre enough, but we may believe that it averaged well with what was paid in neighboring communities.

If the management of the school for a century showed but little change on its financial side, probably the same might be said of the curriculum of studies. There is no evidence that the school question was a very vital one. The requirements for entrance to Harvard College set the standard. Latin was generally taught, but there is no mention of Greek on our records. We may believe there was little real progress in educational matters, both within and without that charmed circle of scholars. Judging, however, from the character and achievements of the men who taught this particular school, we may well believe that their pupils did not lack mental and moral incentives to good work. In training and experience requisite for what was demanded of them, these teachers must have been the equals of those in any other age. Compared with modern schools, those of that day were most deficient in school appliances. This is particularly noticeable in the poor school buildings. Charlestown had built two in the course of the century, wretched little affairs, both of which, not many years after their erection, were in need of constant repairs.

The education of the daughters of the community is not mentioned. If they received any instruction in the so-called "dame" or "spinning" schools, it was at their own expense. Private schools also for the boys, as the records we have quoted intimate, received their share of patronage, especially from the well-to-do. Not all the young men of Charlestown who graduated from the college were trained in the town school. The sons of the poor had some slight attention, but the "youth," the sons of the better class, whether they knew it or not, formed a privileged order in the community. As yet there was no real democratic equality in educational matters, and no free schools in the modern acceptation of the term.

A list of those accredited to Charlestown, who graduated from Harvard College previous to 1701, may prove interesting. (From Bartlett's Address, 1813.)

Comfort Starr, 1647,	Nathaniel Cutler, 1663,
Samuel Nowell, 1653,	Alexander Nowell, 1664,
Joshua Long, 1653 (?),	Daniel Russell, 1669,
Thomas Greaves, 1656,	Isaac Foster, 1671,
Zechariah Symmes, 1657,	Samuel Phipps, 1671,
Zechariah Brigden, 1657,	Nicholas Morton, 1686,
Benjamin Bunker, 1658,	Nicholas Lynde, 1690,
Joseph Lord, 1691.	

A personal examination of the town records shows that from the opening of this century, almost without exception thereafter, the inhabitants of Charlestown, in town meeting assembled, discussed the welfare of the school and voted the annual appropriation for the same. Thus they were building, better, perhaps, than they knew, for upon foundations, similarly well laid, has risen, slowly but surely, the magnificent structure of our present school system.

March 1, 1702-3. "Voted that the selectmen should provide and agree with a schoolmaster at the Town's charge," and May 18, "voted for the master's pay what shall be wanting besides that already granted to make up his salary to £40 per annum, viz: £30." The same day it was "voted that Lt. Coll. Joseph Lynd, Samuel Heyman, Esq. & Dea. Joseph Kettell be

a committee to agree with a schoolmaster according to instructions given, provided it be either Mr. Thatcher, Mr. Whiteing, Mr. Whittemore, Mr. Tufts, Mr. Anger, or Mr. Burr. Attest, N. Dows, Recorder."

January 21 following, this committee "made return that they had agreed with Mr. Thomas Tufts to keep sd school for one year to perfect Children in Reading & to Learn them to write & Cipher, and to Teach them Gramer, for £40 per annum, & to begin his work the last day of June."

At the next May meeting (1704) £28 was voted "for the schoolmaster to make up his Sallery to £40."

We have not attempted to verify the account of Thomas Tufts, to be found in Brook's History of Medford, and Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies. He graduated from Harvard College in the class of 1701. While there he received £40 per year, by the terms of his grandfather's will. (This was as good as teaching school!) He was the son of Peter Tufts, Jr., (styled "Capt. Peter"). His mother's maiden name was Elizabeth Lynde. He was born in Medford, March 31, 1683, and married for his first wife, his cousin, Mary Lynde. She died September 3, 1718, and the following January 29 he married Emma, daughter of Captain Samuel Phipps. Thomas Tufts died December 26, 1733. Wyman records the births of his children.

December 25, 1704, it would appear that the school was again without a teacher, for it was "voted that the Selectmen be a committee to provide a Gramer Schoolmaster for the Town forthwith as soon as possible." Accordingly, on the 29th they enlisted the services of Samuel Heymond, Esq., Capt. Samuel Phipps, and Mr. Joseph Whittemore, "who are to enquire of Mr. Battle and the fellows of the College concerning Mr. Wissell, whether he was a fitt man to be a schoolmaster for this town." These gentlemen reported, January 10, 1705, "that all gave in-cordgment & declare their opinion that as to Mr. Wissell's Learning & other qualifications he was a fitt person for sd work." This report was accepted, and these three gentlemen, along with Mr. Ebenezer Austin as a fourth, were authorized, any two of them, to treat with Mr. Wissell for a term of six months.

Peleg Wiswell (Wiswall) was the son of Rev. Ichabod and Priscilla (Peabody) Wiswall, and was born February 5, 1684, at Duxbury, where his father was ordained and settled. He graduated from Harvard in 1702, and died in 1767. A printed genealogy of the Wiswall family may be consulted. If we remember rightly, he taught many years in the North End School, Boston.

March 4, 1706. It became the duty of the selectmen to provide a schoolmaster for the town, and on the twenty-sixth they empowered Captain Samuel Heyman, Joseph Whittemore, Mr. Bateman, and Robert Wyer "to inquire & treat with Mr. Samuel Burr with reference to his keeping the school in this Towne & to make report at their next meeting." It is recorded that Mr. Burr entered upon his duties, at the rate of £40 per annum, 24 April, 1706.

At the May meeting Captain Heyman and Captain Phipps were empowered to secure workmen for repairing the meeting-house and the schoolhouse; £18 was voted for this object. (At the same meeting Mr. Phipps was voted eleven pounds, four shillings for his services as town representative in 1705.)

March 31, 1707. "It was agreed with Mr. Burr to keep the school one year, as last year, for £40. Also it was ordered that there be another table & two forms provided for the school-house."

May 21, 1707, and May 17, 1708, the usual annual amount was appropriated for the schoolmaster. The vote was the same May 11, 1709, May 22, 1710, and May 23, 1711.

Samuel Burr, A. M. (class of 1697, Harvard), was the son of Major John Burr, of Fairfield, Ct. His mother's maiden name was Sarah Fitch. According to the printed family record, the date of his birth was April 2, 1679; that of his marriage to Elizabeth Jennor (Jenner), June 19, 1707. A daughter, Sarah, born in Cambridge, married Thomas Edwards, of Boston. She received as legacy from her father, a silver tankard, that was her great-grandfather, John Stedman's. Other children of Samuel Burr were John, Samuel, Jr., and Rebecca. Against the name of the widow Wyman has recorded many land trans-

actions. She left a will, dated September 20, 1754. The family genealogy says that Mr. Burr became one of the most famous teachers of his time. For twelve years he was master of the grammar school at Charlestown. He died while master there, August 7, 1719, and was buried in Fairfield, Ct., where there is a monument to his memory. It states that he was educated at Cambridge under the famous William Brattle, and died while on a visit to his native place. We have made our account of this gentleman a somewhat lengthy one, for the reason that his term of service in Charlestown surpassed that of any of his predecessors.

November 19, 1711. "The Selectmen ordered the Repairing the schoolhouse with all Necessary Repairs."

At the meeting of 1712, May 21, we are allowed a little variety. "Voted for Schoolmaster's Sallery, viz.: the Gramer School £40 and £5 to be raised for the payment for some poor children at such women's schools as shall be allowed of by the Selectmen. Being for such Children whose parents are not able to bring them to school, which shall be determined by Captain Samuel Phipps & Captain Jonathan Dows."

Or, as Frothingham, page 246, has it: "The teacher having requested that regulation might be made About the town school, it was voted That, whereas the school, being thronged with so many small reading children that are not able to spell or read as they ought to do, by reason of which Latin scholars, writers, and cypherers cannot be duly attended & instructed as they ought to be, Captain Samuel Phipps & Mr. Jonathan Dows were chosen inspectors & regulators of that matter."

May 20, 1713, the master's salary was increased to £50, and this was the sum paid for the five years following. In 1718 and until 1724, or for six years ensuing, his services were valued at £60.

In 1713 a new building was erected on the Town Hill, near the old schoolhouse. Thus building number two did service thirty-one years, the same length of time as its predecessor. Estimating a schoolhouse of that time as able to withstand the wear and tear of a generation of pupils, we may expect to find this third building yielding to the inevitable about 1745.

Much of the expense of this new building seems to have been covered by voluntary contributions, "one offering a bell, others lime, brick, paint, or stone, and one a 'raising dinner.'" In May the town voted £50 for this purpose, but as the committee in charge had chosen for the location the spot where the "cage" stood, a site north of the meeting-house, a controversy arose and much opposition was expressed. July 14 all previous votes were nullified. Twenty-six citizens now entered a protest; a new meeting was called for August 17, and it was voted to build on the hill near the old house. The original committee then declined to serve. In consequence, the selectmen built the house without advisement. It was "30 feet by 20 feet and 12 feet stud, with one floor of sleepers and one floor of joist aloft." The bills were approved the following February, and amounted to 104*l.* 4*s.* 11*d.* This structure probably served also as a town house.

But to us a more interesting entry is that of town meeting day, May 18, 1714. "Voted £4 for a schoolmaster to teach the children to write among our inhabitants near Reding." As far as we have been able to discover, this is the first appropriation for school purposes "outside the peninsula." Every year thereafter, until May 17, 1725, when this amount had increased to £9, a sum was thus appropriated for a schoolmaster "at ye wood end of the town," or "for a school of children for writing & reading at the upper end of the town." The petition of Captain Benjamin Geary and fifty-three others "to be sett off as a separate town" was presented on that day, and though their prayer was not granted at first, it resulted in a division of the township, and December 17, 1725, the new town of Stoneham was born.

May 13, 1719, a second school without the peninsula was fostered, namely, at the indefinitely located Mistick-side, by an appropriation of £3. This amount was increased to £4 for four years following. In 1724 there seems to have been no vote for this purpose, and May 17, 1725, William Paine and seventeen others presented a petition to be set off to Malden. This request met the same fate as the other, but no doubt the bounds of the town were adjusted later to the satisfaction of all concerned, for we hear no more of this school at "Mistick-side."

These two outlying districts, while under the control of Charlestown, were managed by local committees, whose names are recorded from year to year. In a few instances we know who were the teachers and the length of their service. Thus, at the Stoneham precinct, William Hay taught for the months of February and March, 1721, for the £8. In 1722 George Taylor kept this school for three months, fourteen days, and overrun the appropriation fifteen shillings. In 1724 the teacher was Mr. Hancock, and for 1725 Ebenezer Parker. At Mistick-side John Brentnall kept the school from 8 January to 15 February for the £1 appropriated, and the next year Nathan Burnham rendered a similar service. The query naturally arises whether these outlying districts maintained a school during the major part of the year at their own expense, or are we to suppose that the short periods mentioned represent the sum total of a year's schooling?

October 5, 1719. Among other things, it was voted to provide a bell for the schoolhouse; also that the schoolboys be permitted to sit in the three hindmost seats in the upper part of the front gallery. "They being there under my immediate care and inspection." So petitioned Robert Ward.

May 2, 1720. "Ordered to get two small forms made for Mr. Robert Ward's schoolboys to sit on at the schoolhouse."

November 7, 1720, this gentleman was chosen pastor of the church at Wenham, and ended his labors in Charlestown. The Rev. Robert Ward, of the class of 1719 (Harvard College), died in 1732, at the age of seventy. He was admitted to the Charlestown church December 12, 1714. He seems to have been twice married, if we may trust Wyman's account, which also gives the names and dates of birth of his children. His father, Robert Ward, Sr., was from the county of Munster, Ire., and belonged to the frigate *Nonsuch*.

December 5, 1720. "The selectmen agreed with Mr. Samuel Barrett, Jr., to keep the gramer school till March 1 for £15."

(To be continued.)

LITERARY MEN AND WOMEN OF SOMERVILLE.

By David Lee Maulsby.

[CONCLUDED.]

Three persons remain to be briefly considered. Mrs. Mary A. Pillsbury, the daughter of Edwin Leathe, and connected by blood with the Weston family of Reading and the Brooks family of Medford, was born in Lynnfield in 1838. She was married in 1863 to L. B. Pillsbury. Of the four children, Harry N. Pillsbury, it is safe to say, is known as a chess player throughout America and Europe.

Mrs. Pillsbury early began to write poems, "for her own amusement and for the gratification of her friends." In 1888, shortly before her death, a volume of her pieces was published, called "The Legend of the Old Mill, and Other Poems." The title poem is a story of Mallet's old wind-mill, still looking down upon us from the Nathan Tufts Park, perhaps the most venerable landmark of our city. An Acadian maiden, fleeing from one who would have tarnished her honorable name, takes refuge, disguised as a man, in the old mill, by permission of the old miller. Her pursuer finds her there, runs up the steep ladder after her, but by a misstep falls through a hole in the floor, and meets a horrible death. The poems in this volume include rhymed anecdotes, verses suggested by the children, reflections of natural beauty, and thoughts on religious themes.

Mrs. Katherine B. W. Libby, who died within a year (March 7, 1902), was born and educated in Chelsea, but lived in Somerville since shortly after her marriage. Mrs. Libby was remarkable for her patriotism, as well as her predilection for poetry. A "Daughter of the Revolution," a member of this society, and of several social and philanthropic bodies, she bore her part in practical affairs. Her writing, however, was to her of supreme importance: she would drop instantly whatever she might be doing when a thought came to her, that she might not lose its appropriate expression. Her writings have not been collected into book form. They include poems of nature, patriotism, and religion.

Spring, summer, and autumn are celebrated in turn, the autumn garnering

“The bearded grain in sheaves upon the wold,
Like armored sentinels in coats of gold.”

While

“Through heaven’s blue sea soft clouds of billowy fleece
Float calmly onward to the port of peace.”

The sinking of the Maine, which stirred the whole country, finds response in “War’s Bugle Call” :—

“Shall sons of freedom falter?
Shall coward footsteps lag?
Vile insult has been offered
Our country’s honored flag.
“March on! our country’s heroes!
War’s bugle call will cease
When stainless floats our banner
In golden light of peace.”

Christmas and Easter are occasions of joy, one the joy of mortal life, the other of immortal:—

“Ho for the merry Christmas tide!
Replete with warmth and cheer;
Old Santa Claus, that jolly elf,
Is swiftly drawing near.
Then roll the Yule-log to the hearth,
And light the fires aglow,
With holly deck the festal board,
Hang up the mistletoe.”

* * * * *

“Unveil thy blushing face!
Awake, glad Easter day!
An angel from the sepulchre
Hath rolled the stone away.

“Ye bells, thy silver tongues
These tidings sweetly tell,
And from the wind-harp's throbbing strings
Doth joy's glad anthem swell.”

It is clear that Mrs. Libby had a feeling for metrical language, and also, in her best work, a measure of that essential impulse which makes poetry what it is.

A still more recent loss is that of Mrs. Lowe, who died May 9, 1902. Mrs. Martha Perry Lowe for many years was known as one of the most public-spirited women in this city, active in all good work. Her literary productions include a “Memoir” of her husband, Rev. Charles Lowe, who from 1859 to 1865 was pastor of the First Unitarian church here, and afterward Secretary of the American Unitarian Society. It is said that, in the midst of her numerous deeds of practical beneficence, Mrs. Lowe yet cherished the name of poet above all others. She has left four volumes of verse, and one longer poem unpublished. It is safe to say that, of the published books, “The Olive and the Pine” and “The Immortals” contain the poems by which Mrs. Lowe will be remembered. The former includes verses that are the outcome of travels in Spain, when her brother was secretary of the American Legation at Madrid. It also includes poems of New England. Among the former is a vivid description of a Spanish bull-fight, closing with this address to the reigning princess:—

“Go, fair Infanta, dream
Of bloody death to-day!
Thy little children seem
To see it when they pray.
And, lo! the nations far
Do point, with warning hand,
To yonder stains that are
Upon thy native land!”

The glimpses of picturesque Spain were not more lovely to the writer's young eyes than the homely beauties of New Eng-

land, as the following lines from "The Road Over the Hills" will show:—

"The squirrel quick hath run
Across the track unto the old gray wall,
Wreathed o'er with thorny vines, while brambles tall
Beset it 'round; and 'neath the summer sun
Floats the bronzed butterfly until—behold!—
His wings are turning all to burnished gold!
And all day, in the wild young cricket's ear,
The locust proseth; but she will not hear.
And, hark! a sudden stream of melody
Comes quivering through the calm and silent wood;
'T is the sweet thrush, far from the gazing eye,
Who swelleth now her little gushing throat
Alone for her dear mate and tender brood;
And, ere the air hath caught that lovely note,
'T is gone, and all the woods are dark and lone.
And long they wait expectant of that tone,
Nor know they where she sits, until again
Her music runneth quick through all their bowers,
And ceaseth. Ah! no nightingales of Spain,
That sing at night around Grenada's towers,
So fondly all my ear and heart did gain."

There is a reflection of considerable variety of experience in this volume. The organist in the Spanish cathedral, compelling into his notes the image of his dead wife, gives place to the vastness and awe of the desolate ocean seen from the shore at Beverly. Here is a German lesson, inspiring the young teacher with a hopeless passion for his fair pupil. There is a sympathetic portrayal of a sick woman, waiting patiently from day to day, and from season to season, for the death that is so long in coming, but that comes at last. Glimpses of natural beauty relieve the sadness of such scenes. Take, for example, "The Silent Way," describing a woodland path so thickly guarded that neither the winds of March nor the midsummer sun, nor even November frost, can enter.

"But go at sweet Midsummer night;
The pines with showers are spicy yet,
The birches tremble at the set
Of sun, in pale, transfigured light,
And low the savin clusters wet.

"Go on between the tangled walls
Of shining twigs, that drop the rain;
Then 'round the hill, to greet again
The purple day before it falls,
And breathe the clover on the plain."

Such bits from Nature occur on the background of country life. "The Quilting" and "The Husking" are two companion poems, through both of which a single love story runs, troublous, but with a happy ending.

In "The Immortals," Mrs. Lowe celebrates heroes and friends that have gone from sight. Charlotte Bronte, Mrs. Browning, Chatterton, Shelley represent the English poets; Lowell, Emerson, Whittier, and E. R. Sill, the Americans; Channing and Brooks and Charles Lowe, her husband, the ministers; to say nothing of the several friends commemorated, dearer than any stranger. Let us choose a few stanzas from "Sleepy Hollow," written on the occasion of Emerson's funeral:—

"They bore him up the aisle,
His white hands folded meekly on his breast;
He had the very smile
He wore the night he gently sank to rest.

"The words of love were said,
We prayed and sang together; all was done;
And then the way they led
Along the street, the people following on.

"We covered him with green:—
He loved the hemlock branches and the pine,—
And there he lay, serene,
And yet not he, not there the spark divine.

"Be thou not over sad,
Dear ancient town in thy affliction sore;
Think that what thou hast had
Is thine to keep and give forevermore."

I think I have read enough to show those of us who had not the privilege of Mrs. Lowe's acquaintance that she was a woman of genuine love for nature and for man, of fine perceptions, and of a considerable degree of skill in the art of verse-making. If her muse responds more readily to the melancholy than to the joyous note in human life, we can remind ourselves of what one of the greatest American poets and critics has urged: that a "certain taint of sadness is inseparably connected with all the higher manifestations of true beauty."

And so the end is reached of our roll of authors that have passed away. If we have not found rivals of the greater poets of America, if our story writers have still something to learn from those of England and France, surely a beginning has been made, and the end is not yet. The living writers of our city are as numerous, as industrious, as well equipped in endowment and literary art as their predecessors. We will not boast of our achievement, past or present. But it is safe to say that in history, in fiction, and in poetry, Somerville has authors whom she well may cherish. We need not name them; we know them. Let us expect that they will try themselves by high standards, that they will not be content with what they have already done, that they will strive to lift our city among those rare historic places where men and women have lived who have uttered in the best way the best that was in them.

Officers of Somerville Historical Society.

1903-1904.

President,	John F. Ayer.
First Vice-President,	Luther B. Pillsbury.
Second Vice-President,	Levi L. Hawes.
Third Vice-President,	Oliver Bacon.
Recording Secretary,	Mrs. Elizabeth F. Hammond.
Corresponding Secretary,	Mrs. V. E. Ayer.
Treasurer,	Seth Mason.
Librarian and Curator,	Alfred M. Cutler.

Council-at-Large.

Charles D. Elliot,	L. Roger Wentworth,	Anna P. Vinal.
--------------------	---------------------	----------------

Historic Sites.

J. O. Hayden, Chairman,	Charles D. Elliot.
	Luther B. Pillsbury.

Essays and Addresses.

John F. Ayer, Chairman,	Charles D. Elliot,
William E. Brigham,	Seth Mason,
	Mrs. V. E. Ayer.

Library and Cabinet.

Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman,	Levi L. Hawes.
Mrs. Helen M. Heald,	Miss Marriette E. Eddy.

Photographs.

Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman,	Charles W. Colman,
	Albert L. Haskell.

Press and Clippings.

Miss Anna P. Vinal, Chairman,	Miss M. Agnes Hunt,
Miss Lucy M. Stone,	Miss Mary A. Haley,
	Miss Marion Knapp.

Publications.

Sam Walter Foss, Chairman,	Frank M. Hawes,
Sara A. Stone,	John F. Ayer, <i>ex-officio</i> .

Military Records.

Col. Edwin C. Bennett, Chairman,	Levi L. Hawes,
John H. Dusseault,	Alfred M. Cutler.

House.

Mrs. Elizabeth F. Hammond, Chairman,	Mrs. V. E. Ayer,
	Mrs. F. De Witt Lapham.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

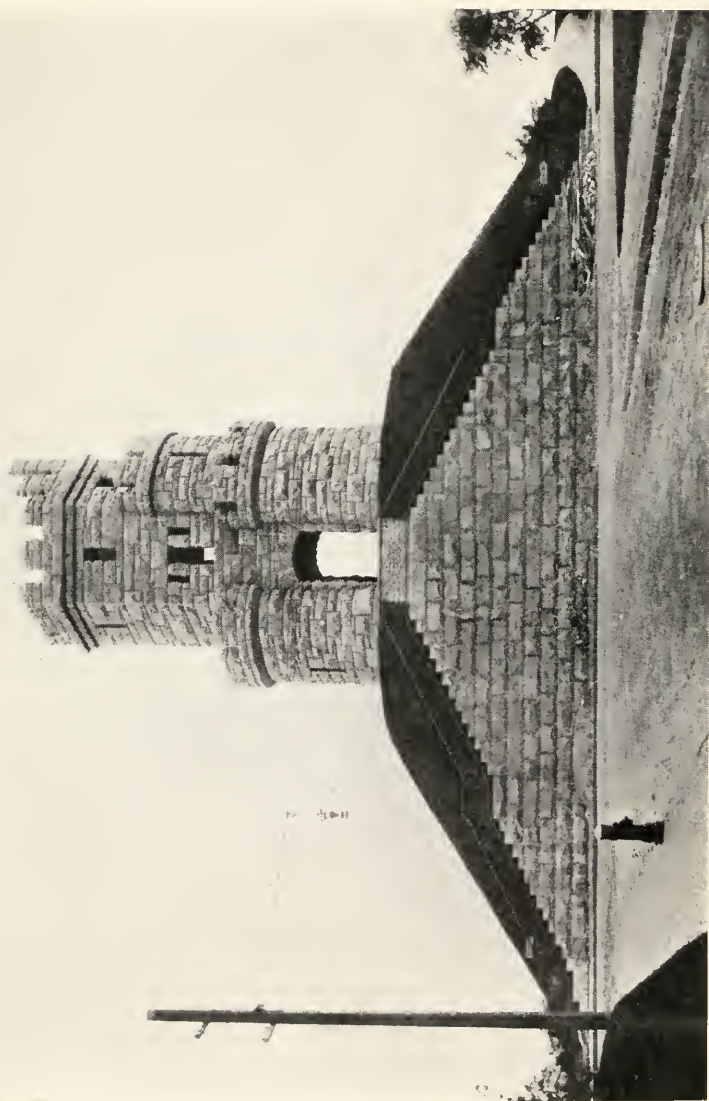
January, 1904

Vol. II

No. 4







PROSPECT HILL TOWER.

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. II.

JANUARY, 1904.

No. 4.

THE PROSPECT HILL PARK CELEBRATION.

THE DEDICATION of the Prospect Hill Park, October 29, 1903, called attention to one of the most significant historic locations in our local limits, and one of the most significant historic events in our national history. The raising of the flag on Prospect Hill, January 1, 1775, was an event that looms larger and larger as time goes on. It was a small, but sturdy people shaking the fist of defiance at an old and powerful empire. Subsequent events disclosed that this was no idle threat. A young nation really announced itself at this time.

Prospect Hill has not attained the renown which its significance deserves. It should be a spot of historic pilgrimage second only to Bunker Hill and Lexington. But it has received very meagre attention at the hands of the general historian, and, until lately, has been held in but slight local estimation. This condition of affairs will now continue no longer. We now see the events which happened on this height in their true perspective, and their significance is felt and appreciated. The Somerville Historical Society will, undoubtedly, from time to time, unearth new facts and forgotten events in connection with this place. It furnishes a theme worthy of much investigation, and new historic data of significance may be expected. But even if no further historic facts are brought to light, Prospect Hill cannot, in the future, lapse into the comparative obscurity of the past. It must remain one of the beacon heights in American history.

Prospect Hill Park, as it is at present arranged, is one of the most beautiful parks in the state for outlook and for general beauty of arrangement. But at first it was a very unpromising location, unsightly in the extreme, and by no means an orna-

mental adjunct to the scenery. The artistic laying out of the park was the work of much thought and careful consideration. This was accomplished through the efforts of the City Engineer, Ernest W. Bailey. The tower that surmounts the height was planned in his office. The imposing beauty of this structure grows upon the observer, and has been highly praised by architectural experts.

The work of preparing suitable inscriptions for this tower was delegated to the Somerville Historical Society, which in turn turned it over to the Committee on Historic Sites. This committee consists of Messrs. J. O. Hayden, Charles D. Elliot, and Luther B. Pillsbury. The committee, after much study, decided upon the following inscriptions:—

THE AMERICAN ARMY UNDER GENERAL PUTNAM
ON JUNE 17, 1775
WITHDREW FROM BUNKER HILL TO THIS HEIGHT
AND HERE ERECTED THE
CITADEL
THE STRONGEST WORK
IN THE BESIEGING LINES OF BOSTON
AND WHICH FOR THE NINE MONTHS WITHSTOOD
THE BRITISH BOMBARDMENT
JUNE 17, 1775, TO MARCH 17, 1776.

HERE ON JULY 18, 1775
WAS RAISED AMID GREAT REJOICING THE FLAG
PRESENTED TO GENERAL ISRAEL PUTNAM
AND HIS HEROIC SOLDIERS
BEARING THE MOTTO OF CONNECTICUT
"QUI TRANSTULIT SUSTINET"
AND OF MASSACHUSETTS, "AN APPEAL
TO HEAVEN."

FROM THIS EMINENCE
ON JANUARY 1, 1776
THE FLAG OF THE UNITED COLONIES
BEARING THIRTEEN STRIPES AND THE CROSSES
OF SAINT GEORGE AND SAINT ANDREW
FIRST WAVED DEFIANCE TO A FOE.

"THE FLOWER OF THE BRITISH ARMY"
PRISONERS OF WAR
WHO SURRENDERED AT SARATOGA
WERE QUARTERED ON THIS HILL
FROM NOVEMBER 7, 1777, TO OCTOBER 15, 1778
GUARDED BY AMERICAN TROOPS
UNDER GENERAL WILLIAM HEATH.

ON THIS HISTORIC HILL
ANSWERING THEIR COUNTRY'S CALL
IN 1862
ENCAMPED THE SOLDIERS OF SOMERVILLE
WHOSE RECORD OF PATRIOTISM AND FORTITUDE
IN THE CIVIL WAR
IS WORTHY OF HIGHEST HONOR
AND COMMEMORATION.

THESE INSCRIPTIONS WERE PREPARED
BY THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

The following is the inscription for the inside of the tower :—

THIS TABLET IS ERECTED
IN MEMORY OF THE
SOLDIERS OF THE REVOLUTION
AND OF THE CIVIL WAR
WHO ENCAMPED ON
PROSPECT HILL
AND OF THE BANNERS
UNDER WHICH THEY
VALIANTLY FOUGHT.

THIS TOWER AND PARK
DEDICATED OCTOBER 29, 1903.

No excuse is necessary for suspending the regular issue of this publication to commemorate an event like this. The regular features of this magazine will be resumed with our next issue. This is a Prospect Hill number.

For the abstract of the exercises and addresses of the dedication we are indebted to the Somerville Journal.

Promptly at 2 o'clock, Thursday, October 29, 1903, to the music of the band and a salute from the gun of the naval brigade, Mrs. Lilla E. Arnold, of 28 Vinal avenue, unfurled a handsome new American flag from the top of the observatory. Mrs. Arnold is a direct descendant of Captain Jonathan Poole, who was "the standard bearer of the first flag designed and floated by the colonists in America," about 1658. The flag was presented to the city by Prospect-hill Chapter, Daughters of the Revolution, of Somerville.

After a selection by the band, prayer was offered by Rev. J. Vanor Garton, pastor of the West Somerville Baptist Church.

The programme included: Singing, "The Flag," H. K. Hadley, by the pupils of the high schools, led by S. Henry Hadley; introductory address by Mayor Edward Glines; address, His Excellency Governor John L. Bates; singing (a) "The Breaking Waves Dashed High," (b) "Battle Hymn of the Republic," by the pupils; address, His Honor Lieutenant-Governor Curtis Guild, Jr.; singing, "The Star-Spangled Banner," (with accompaniment by the band); remarks, by John F. Ayer, president of the Somerville Historical Society; poem, by Librarian Sam Walter Foss; music, Eighth Regiment band; singing, "America."

ADDRESS BY MAYOR GLINES.

Mayor Glines said in part:—

Somerville appears to-day in a dual role. She is both guest and hostess. She is honored, and, in turn, she bestows honor. She invites His Excellency the Governor and His Honor the Lieutenant-Governor of this great commonwealth to participate in these ceremonies. She honors them by a reception such as only so patriotic a city can give, and feels herself honored indeed by the unusual compliment of the presence of both of these distinguished statesmen.

She is honored by the presence of those into whose care she has entrusted her keeping; by the presence of these old men, who have watched her grow from infancy to youth, and from youth to a strong young womanhood; by the divine supplication in her behalf; by the singing of the two hundred pupils from her surpassing high schools; by the song of her poet; by the stirring strains of the band; and by the military display that is to her a reminder of days that were not days of peace.

And, too, she is honored by this vast concourse of people—the outpouring of her citizens to celebrate an event in her history. In return, she honors us each and all by granting to us to step upon this hallowed soil and to breathe in the patriotic atmosphere of this occasion.

We believe these exercises will be carried out in manner most befitting; but however grandly we might have planned,

however nobly we might have wrought, it would not have been overdone, for, to do more than justice to so altogether worthy a theme—that were an impossibility.

It has been aptly said, "Prospect Hill stands upon the same plane as Bunker Hill, Lexington Green, Concord Bridge, and Plymouth Rock."

The British trooped by the foot of this hill on that memorable night when Paul Revere's warning notes rang all along the way from Charlestown to Lexington and Concord.

Less than twenty-four hours afterward, its base was again skirted by the redcoats, as they beat their hasty retreat towards Charlestown, and it was here,

"From behind each fence and farmyard wall,"
that the hottest shot and swiftest-flying bullets of their whole retreat accelerated their hurrying movements.

ADDRESS BY GOVERNOR BATES.

Governor Bates spoke as follows:—

On behalf of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, I extend her greetings to her citizens in Somerville, and her congratulations on the dedication to-day of this historic spot and granite tower to liberty-loving people everywhere. Fellow citizens, you have done well. You have recognized the relation which the fortifications erected here bear to the history of our nation. The work done on Bunker Hill showed that the patriots of 1775 could fight. The work done here showed that they would never give up; that they could stand, but could not run.

So it came to pass while redcoats filled the town of Boston, while British warships thundered in the harbor and on the river, while the red-coated soldiers flung their defiance from yonder Bunker Hill, that upon this mount patriots plied the shovel, minutemen tramped the redoubt, and Lee, and Greene, and Sullivan, and Putnam planned bulwarks of revolution, and Washington raised the thirteen stripes of Union, and all the time, sheltered behind the citadel of this hill, a liberty-loving dependent people were becoming a liberty-demanding independent nation.

Behind the bulwarks erected here—bulwarks of sand and



GOVERNOR JOHN L. BATES.



MAYOR EDWARD GLINES.



JOHN F. AYER.



REV. J. VANOR GARTON.

men and of men with sand—was laid the foundation of a new commonwealth, was born a new nation—the mightiest of any age. Here the very wind tells of devotion and of struggle, and here may this monument ever stand to show not only the appreciation in which you hold the deeds of the fathers, but also that it may be the witness that the generation of to-day values its magnificent heritage, and is true to the ideals of those who bequeathed it.

Congratulations, then, again to Somerville that it possesses this interesting historic park, and congratulations on having a citizenship with the patriotism, the public spirit, and the generous heart to conceive and carry out this noble memorial.

ADDRESS BY LT.-GOVERNOR GUILD.

Mr. Guild said in part:—

The monument we meet to dedicate is fittingly enough a suggestion of the battlemented turrets of a flag-tower. Here lay the embattled lines that for the last time saw a foreign foeman tread the soil of Massachusetts. Here for the first time was hoisted the first flag of an American Union.

Not here but on a neighboring height was stored the powder of the Middlesex towns so desired by General Gage, but though his soldiers on September 1, 1774, did secure "212 Half Barrels of Powder" belonging to King George, they were too late to secure the rebel powder, for Medford, the last of all the towns to act, had carried hers away just forty-eight hours before.

From this historic height, now shorn, alas, at the command of commerce, of its yet loftier peak, the country folk of the Mystic valley saw this first hostile demonstration of the Revolution. Hither, too, came the British raging with the march and fight that had lasted well-nigh twenty-four hours on that historic nineteenth of April, for the battle that began on Lexington Common ended on the slopes of Prospect Hill. The British flankers surprised the American minutemen, firing upon the column in the street below. The boys fled before the redcoats. James Miller, of Somerville, alone showed that the gray hairs of age may outdare at times even the red blood of youth.

"I am too old to run," he said, and for the first time this historic spot was stained with the blood of the white man, where the old man died the death of a soldier and a gentleman.

From that day till the end of the siege of Boston the spot where Somerville's first blood was shed became the very Mount Pisgah of the American line.

Here for the first time after the first battle of the Revolution the officers of the Massachusetts forces were summoned. Here with the first guard mount of the Revolution on the evening that followed the Concord fight the siege of Boston began. Here, after the Pyrrhic victory of the English at Bunker Hill, came the men who retired only when the lack of powder left them without the means to fight.

Here they made their stand and invited the further attack that never came. The scarlet tide that overflowed the crest of Charlestown paused before this barrier that since has never known upon its crest the flitter in triumph of an alien flag.

The first flag to fly from the redoubt on Prospect Hill was not that of Massachusetts. Putnam had built the works, and Putnam, though a son of Massachusetts, hoisted on July 18, 1775, the flag not of his native but of his adopted state; the flag of the state which, except Massachusetts, contributed most to the Revolution. It was Connecticut's flag with its "*Qui Transtulit Sustinet*" and the motto of all the revolutionists, "*An Appeal to Heaven*."

Nor were all the troops that gathered here even from New England. Riflemen of Virginia and Pennsylvania and Maryland camped upon these slopes, and in this first serious contest of our country against a foreign enemy, as in the last, when we crossed the seas to fight a foreign foe, stood together not as Virginians or sons of Massachusetts, but as Americans united against the common enemy.

ADDRESS BY JOHN F. AYER.

John F. Ayer's address was as follows:—

The tower is completed, outwardly, at all events. Still there remains to be placed in position the historical tablet. The

committee has placed this in the hands of the Somerville Historical Society to formulate. That very important and agreeable duty the Historical Society will cheerfully and conscientiously perform.

In concise and dignified English, it will tell the story, that all, young and old, may readily comprehend the reason of its erection, and be impressed with the lesson the monument itself conveys.

I fear we here do not the half appreciate the historic value of our surroundings—do not half comprehend or value the riches, historically speaking, of our city, even, to say nothing of the wealth of such material in the region included in the original Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonies. We do well to mark all historic spots, and to call attention to these grand features in the landscape of our city.

As the most interesting colonial object outside of the Old Mill at Newport, R. I., the Powder House stands a monument to the liberality of one of our honored families. It and the park surrounding it deservedly attract the interest and admiration of all lovers of the historic, both native and the stranger within our gates.

Quarry Hill and Prospect Hill are surely immortalized. Why not immortalize the spot where the Blessing of the Bay was launched by erecting a fitting monument there?

Why not, Mr. Mayor and gentlemen of the city government, consider its claim for recognition? The Blessing of the Bay was the forerunner of that great shipbuilding interest that made Medford and New England famous—the forerunner, also, of the American navy, for it became the first armed cruiser of America, and although of tiny proportions—only twenty-one tons—it did good service along the shores of New England in protecting the interests of the settlers—the traders and the fishermen—from the attacks of Indians and others on the high seas.

Mr. Mayor, when the history of Somerville shall appear, one of the most interesting chapters, I fancy, will refer to “Somerville During the Siege of Boston.” The whole of our area was virtually a military camp. The line of earthworks ex-

tended across the town from Mystic river to the Cambridge line, thence on to Dorchester; our own citizens, as well as the other undisciplined yeomen from all the back country, lined the trenches and stood behind the guns!

In some way the exact line of these entrenchments and these forts should be permanently marked. I would suggest a line of steel flagstuffs at regular intervals from which each day Old Glory should float; from the top of these poles at night parti-colored incandescent lights might appear, and so by a display of flags by day and a line of electric lights at night, the way might be outlined, and thus authoritatively made plain to us to-day and to the generations which shall follow us. In connection with this observatory, a display of this kind would prove a great attraction and would draw many to our city to enjoy the magnificent outlook from the tower, and to note the location of the old-time earthwork across the city.

With the placing of the tablet, the monument will be completed, and stand as a sacred memorial of the great struggle of 1775 and 1776, which resulted in the evacuation of Boston, and ultimately in the independence of the colonies.

May the lesson which it teaches be taken home to all our hearts, may our interest in things historical and in all the means for the promulgation of historic truths, and our veneration for the noble men of former times and their patriotic deeds, increase from year to year, and our pride in the good name of our city and its historical objects and landmarks endure even unto the end.

THE FLAG OF PROSPECT HILL.

Poem by Sam Walter Foss.

Full many men must meet and mix
To form a nation. On this height,
On that first day of 'seventy-six,
A nation rose in sight.
And on this height stood men the peers
Of God's strong souls of all the years.

Time-tempered men from farm and shop,
The disciplined recruits of toil,
The fruitage and the chiefest crop
Of Freedom's sturdy soil.

A strong deed, in an hour of need,
Finds strong men equal to the deed.

"Who is this chieftain from the South
Strong in his youth yet sternly sage?"—

"Fame placed her trumpet to her mouth
And blew his name to every age,
And still that blast blows on and on
That peals the name of Washington."

"What is that tall white shaft of pine?"

"That shaft when many years have gone
Shall be a nation's lifted sign

For centuries to look back upon;
To loom through perils, victories, fears,
A beacon for a thousand years."

"But see! there floats an unknown flag,
A flag unseen, unknown before;
Let England's might tear down the rag
That dares to flaunt upon this shore—
Aye, snatch the insolent shred away—
'Tis but the banner of a day!"

"Ah no; by many breezes fanned,
That flag shall float o'er field and town,
And strong, ah, strong, must be the hand
That tears that lifted banner down.
Old thrones shall reel, old realms shall die,
But still that flag shall wave on high."

"But who are these plain plowmen here,
These wielders of the axe and spade,
In awkward regimental gear
Drawn up in loose parade?"

"Why these are empire builders, man,
The greatest since the world began."

"Who are these cohorts from the wood?"

"They are the vanguard files of fate,
Proud men of red, imperial blood,
High, regal souls, and great,
The children of a haughty name,
The sires of states and sons of fame."

"And here to-day breaks on this height
The sun-burst of a nation's morn,
That unknown banner greets the light
That sees an empire born,
And these wide ranks that round us stand
Are fathers of a mighty land."

They flung their banner to the wind,
They flung it in the face of foes,—
And thus they published to mankind
That human nature grows,
And that a youngling state had grown
Too big for insults from a throne.

That flag now floats from many a height,
And waves its word from crag to crag,
Beyond the day, across the night,—
The sunrise and the sunset flag;
That flag is blown by every breeze,
Across the world and all its seas.

And as it waves from slope to slope
From sea to sea, or far or near,
Ah, may it never shame the hope
Of those strong men who placed it here,
But be, on sea or shore unfurled,
The banner of the hope of the world.



RAISING THE FIRST AMERICAN UNION FLAG ON PROSPECT HILL, JANUARY 1, 1776.
From the Painting by Clyde O. De Land.

ISRAEL PUTNAM AND PROSPECT HILL.

There was no more interested reader of the account of the dedication of Prospect Hill Park and Memorial Tower, we venture to assert, than the venerable Dr. Putnam, of Salem, and at the request of the president of the Somerville Historical Society, he has prepared the following article for publication. It is a subject which has long interested him, and out of the fullness of his heart he writes as he has done. He here makes some limited use of his pamphlet discussion of the command at Bunker Hill, which was published several years ago, and was highly praised and approved by eminent historians, scholars, statesmen, lawyers, military men, and others. The edition having long since been exhausted, he hopes to issue another by and by, to which he will add a copious Appendix, with various letters and several more illustrations. The work bears the title of "Israel Putnam and Bunker Hill," as the following is entitled "Israel Putnam and Prospect Hill."

John F. Ayer, Esq., President Somerville Historical Society :—

Dear Sir: I thank you very much for the copy you sent me of the Somerville Journal, containing a full account of the dedication, on the twenty-ninth of October, of Prospect Hill Park and Memorial Tower. The very appropriate and eloquent speeches, and all the proceedings of the occasion, as reported in that paper, are seen to have been most interesting and admirable, and you all are greatly to be congratulated on your signal success in such a commemoration of the important events of your local history that occurred at the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. I only regret that I could not be present, then and there, it would have been such a real delight to me.

It gives me much pleasure to comply with your request for some facts about General Israel Putnam and his occupancy of Prospect Hill, additional to those which were briefly stated by the speakers on the day of celebration. Let me say at the outset that I have not the honor of being a descendant of the old hero, yet from such study as I have been able to make of his life and character, I have too much admiration for him and too deep a

sense of the incalculable value of his service to his country and ours, not to join with others in seeking to do ample justice to his memory, especially as regards the noblest work or deeds of his illustrious career. Mayor Glines, Governor Bates, and Lieutenant-Governor Guild made various fitting allusions to him in their addresses, but at a time when so much must have crowded upon their minds from the recorded annals that came to view, one can well understand how crisp and short must needs have been the mention of even the chiefest matters. I can only hope to fill out to some extent certain things that were so pertinently and effectively said; and the better to present what I would fain write, and to make the story as complete as I can or may under the circumstances and for the present purpose, let me quote here the allusions to which I have referred, and which I think may well be repeated in this connection.

Said Mayor Glines: "On the evening of June 16, 1775, this soil again resounded with the tramp of soldiers, as the gallant Colonel Prescott and a thousand men under his inspiring lead swept by on their way to Bunker Hill. It was here that on the night of June 16 General Putnam, the gallant 'Old Put' of ploughshare and wolf's-den fame, began throwing up the intrenchments which soon became the citadel of the works running from the Charles to the Mystic, and the very stronghold of the besieging American army." And he also said: "Prospect Hill is especially dear to us, not for the fact that its occupation by Putnam doubtless saved Cambridge, so vital to the enemy, and perhaps the very country; not that here it was, a month almost to a day after Bunker Hill was fought, that 'an American flag was thrown to the breeze before an enemy,' the scarred ensign of the Third Connecticut Regiment, 'Putnam's flag'; not that here for many weary days were encamped the Massachusetts and Rhode Island troops of General Nathaniel Greene, nor because it was here that many of the troops of Burgoyne's surrendered army were quartered after Arnold's strategy got the better of them at Saratoga; not for records like these, but because here, on the first day of January, 1776, on which the new Continental Army was organized in the presence of our great and good

Washington, there was hoisted the flag that by its stripes of alternate hues proclaimed the cementing of the thirteen American colonies in a common bond against British oppression. This record," Mayor Glines declared, "belongs to the sublimest page in the history of the hill."

I quote, also, from the speech of Governor Bates, who said: "So it came to pass that while redcoats filled the town of Boston, while British warships thundered in the harbor and on the river, while the red-coated soldiers flung their defiance from yonder Bunker Hill, upon this mount patriots plied the shovel, minute-men tramped the redoubt, and Lee, and Greene, and Sullivan, and Putnam" (some reversal of the order of the names needed) "planned bulwarks of revolution, and Washington raised the thirteen stripes of Union, and all the time, sheltered behind the citadel of the hill, a liberty-loving, dependent people were becoming a liberty-demanding, independent nation."

And Lieutenant-Governor Guild said: "The first flag to fly from the redoubt on Prospect Hill was not that of Massachusetts. Putnam had built the works, and Putnam, though a son of Massachusetts, hoisted on July 18, 1775, the flag, not of his native state, but of his adopted state, the flag of the state which, except Massachusetts, contributed most to the Revolution. It was Connecticut's flag, with its 'Qui transtulit sustinet,' and the motto of all the Revolutionists, 'An Appeal to Heaven.'" And Mr. Guild added: "Colonel Stephen Moylan, of Moylan's Dragoons, a witty Corkonian in the American army, gives a comic picture of 'Old Put,' the only thing, he says, that did not thaw during that sloppy winter. 'With solemn mien,' says Moylan, "'Old Put' tramped amongst his men, answering every question with 'Powder! Powder! Ye gods, give us powder!'" Mr. Guild seems to connect this story with "these slopes" of Prospect Hill as a "vivid picture of the scene," but Colonel S. A. Drake, in his "Old Landmarks of Middlesex," with somewhat more probability or truth transfers it to Lechmere Point in East Cambridge at a time in the dead of winter, 1775-'76, when Putnam was there constructing works of defense, and when, owing to the "heavy fire" of the British and to "the frozen condition of

the ground, which made the labor one of infinite difficulty, it was not until the last days of February that the redoubts were completed." The severity of the season must have lessened in January to permit the operations thus to go on to success, and to justify these words of the same month from an officer whom the colonel thus quotes: "The bay is open,—everything thaws except 'Old Put.' He is still as hard as ever crying out for 'Powder! Powder! Ye gods, give us powder!'" It may have been a frequent cry with the General, and no wonder; but we doubt very much whether he raised it on the "slopes" of Prospect Hill in the "sloppy winter" of June and July, 1775, when all accounts attest that only then was he ever there, and that the weather was extremely hot. An Essex county man once presented, with other charges, a bill to his neighbor for the use of a horse and sleigh for a June ride, whereupon the latter said that he would see if he had jotted down the circumstance, but he could hardly remember that he had ever taken a sleighride in June. We can better credit the statement, "Everything thaws here except 'Old Put.'"

I copy thus fully these various allusions to General Putnam's service on Prospect Hill, all the more because they are a juster treatment of the patriot warrior than that which certain writers have meted out to him in their accounts of the Battle of Bunker Hill. Some facts with reference to that momentous event seem to me to be necessary here, as showing more clearly in what capacity and by whose authority he led his broken army, after the engagement, to Somerville, and what was the significance of his command and work on and around its famous height.

All know with what alacrity Putnam, as soon as he heard of the Battle of Lexington, left his plough in his field at Pomfret, his Connecticut home, and flew horseback to Cambridge and Concord, where, after an all night's ride of a hundred miles, he arrived the next morning, and immediately consulted with the patriot committees and authorities there. His military exploits for ten years in the French and Indian wars had given him great renown as a brave, energetic, and resolute soldier, full of resources and love of country. He had already shown that he was an

ardent and active friend of the cause of the colonies, and his rank was now that of lieutenant-colonel. His coming was hailed by all with greatest enthusiasm, and was worth, says Colonel Drake, the historian, an accession of ten thousand men to the movement on foot at that critical juncture. It was decided that a large New England or American army should be raised, and a stirring appeal was speedily sent broadcast to this end; and as the quota from Connecticut would be about six thousand men, Putnam hurried back to that state to put matters in train for their swift recruitment, organization, and march. As soon as he had done this, he hastened his return to Cambridge before them with a company of his own, and with a drove of sheep for the suffering patriots of Boston. He was stationed by General Ward, the commander-in-chief, at Cambridgeport, nearest Boston, and at a most exposed and important point in the siege of that city, and the hardy yeomanry of Massachusetts, Connecticut, New Hampshire, and Rhode Island straightway came rushing in large numbers to headquarters, in response to the call. It was decided by the Committee of Safety, when they learned that the enemy was about to sally forth from Boston for an attack, that Bunker Hill should at once be fortified; and accordingly they "recommended to the Council of War that the above-mentioned Bunker's Hill be maintained by sufficient force being posted there." As Putnam was plainly the ruling spirit of the Council, he probably had much to do with designating Prescott and his thousand Massachusetts and Connecticut men for the service. He was anxious to bring the foe out of their pent-up quarters, and fight them at once on more "equal terms." He had just been made brigadier-general by his adopted state, and he was now made general superintendent of the detachment. Said Colonel Samuel Swett in his story of the Battle of Bunker Hill, which was published in 1818, and was declared by Alden Bradford, the historian of Massachusetts, "The Christian Examiner," and other highest authorities, to be the most correct and perfect of all the earlier accounts of the engagement, whatever additional details have since been gathered: "General Putnam, having the general superintendence of the expedition, and the

engineer, Colonel Gridley, accompanied the troops." General Seth Pomeroy, it may be stated, also went with them, and this was on the evening of June 16. As they reached the base of Bunker Hill, there was a memorable halt, when an animated discussion took place as to which height they should fortify, that or Breed's Hill just beyond it; or, in case they should intrench on both, which of the two they should begin with first. Contrary to the expectations of the Committee of Safety, they finally concluded to go on and occupy Breed's, "nearer Boston," doubtless having been instructed to do so by the Council of War, with permission to act as they should think best, as they drew near the place and considered all the circumstances of the situation. There, as they reached the summit, Putnam, Gridley, and Prescott laid out the ground and formed the plan for the historic earthwork or redoubt which the men with vigorous toil erected during the night on the spot where now Bunker Hill Monument stands. As the enemy saw early the next morning what had been done during the darkness, they began a lively fire at the fort from their ships on the river and from the opposite shore, while later they landed troops from Boston at Moulton's Point (Moreton's or Morton's), the northeastern end of the peninsula, with the evident intent to march along the Mystic, and so flank Prescott and his garrison at the redoubt. To intercept them, the provincials of the several states who had come upon the ground hastily made a barricade of a rail fence that stretched between the Mystic and Breed's Hill by stuffing it with new-mown grass that lay plentifully in the field near at hand, and here between the two points were lined, also, regiments, or parts of regiments, as they continued to arrive and to be assigned their places by General Putnam; Stark and Reed, with their brave men from New Hampshire, as the left wing by the Mystic, with Prescott and most of his detachment at Breed's as the right wing, while along the middle way were stationed General Pomeroy and Captain Knowlton, with their respective Massachusetts and Connecticut forces. As the proud and formidable column of the foe came on, the serried array of the patriot yeomanry met it in fiercest combat, and hurled it back under the lead of Putnam,

who now had assumed the supreme command, by right of superior rank, and had taken his post near the eastern base or lower declivities of Bunker Hill, where he could best survey the scene and order the action of the day; riding, as he did, this way and that along the lines to encourage and strengthen his soldiers in the hour of conflict; or hastening to the rear in the lull of battle to hurry on the expected and needed, but tardy, reinforcements. Enraged at their first discomfiture, these fine old veterans of the British army, notwithstanding their heavy loss, dashed themselves once more against the Yankee farmers and craftsmen at the fence where the slaughter of the battle was most terrible, and whence they were driven back a second time with greater loss than before, "the dead lying on the ground as thick as sheep in a fold." Stung to madness by such successive defeats, the grenadiers and light infantry of the foe rallied for another assault, and, turning a little to the left with fresh accessions, made a desperate rush for the redoubt, and soon captured it, after a stout and heroic resistance by Prescott and his garrison, many of the latter being killed by the victors, while the rest of them, with the commanding colonel himself, made their escape and went their way to Cambridge.

Meanwhile the heroes at the fence, exhausted from fighting, suffering from heat, and decimated in numbers, seeing that the fort was in possession of the enemy, and that they themselves were in danger of being flanked and captured, began to retreat and to fall into disorder and confusion. Putnam was now at the height of his tremendous power and energy. With voice like thunder, and with almost superhuman action, he commanded and entreated his compatriots,—some say even with oaths,—to make one stand more for battle and victory; but all in vain. They were too much weakened and demoralized for the attempt, so that not their commander's prodigious exertion itself availed to bring order out of chaos and make them renew the strife; and then it was that he saw that the effort was hopeless, and, gathering what of the army was left, and joining certain fresh arrivals to it, he marched the whole over the Neck to Prospect Hill, there to intrench in full sight of the foe, and like a lion at bay to be

prepared for another encounter. It was one of the wisest and best deeds of his life. But for that, the British might in the hour of their triumph have pursued the frightened and flying host, and made Somerville, Cambridge, and other towns their prey; but with such an obstacle in their path, they did not choose to undertake the venture. Well said Mr. Guild, "Here, after the Pyrrhic victory of the English at Bunker Hill, came the men who invited the further attack that never came"; and said Governor Bates, "The red-coated soldiers flung their defiance from yonder Bunker Hill." It was all they could do. What night possibly have been the disastrous consequences, had not Putnam occupied Prospect Hill as he did, is intimated in words already quoted from Mayor Glines. At any rate, the service is seen to have been one of immense importance, and it was one entirely of the general's own choosing. It was at a moment of fearful excitement and disorder, when neither General Ward nor any other authority could be consulted, and when the destinies of an empire seemed to tremble in the balance. In that dread crisis Putnam acted solely on his own responsibility. Says Dr. Increase N. Tarbox in his remarkable "Life of Israel Putnam" (1876): "We have his own express statement on this point, made to the Committee of Safety not long after, at a time when he had the burden of some grievance on his mind. He says, 'Pray, did I not take possession of Prospect Hill the very night after the fight on Bunker Hill, without having any orders from any person? And was not I the only general officer that tarried there?'" And this action by General Putnam was not less wise and of his own accord than it was courageous and full of his proverbial grit. He was not one to fly from the field in the hour of danger with the scared and discouraged officers and shattered regiments, and hasten to Cambridge to report with Prescott that the day was lost. He chose to take his post near the Neck, and dispute the passage of the victors and face the consequences. Who would have done it if he had not?

And it all goes to show that his was the supreme command at Bunker Hill, as it was on Prospect Hill. Bancroft, who was a warm friend and partisan of Prescott, admits that the General

"assumed" it on the retreat, saying that, "acting on his own responsibility, he now for the first time during the day assumed the supreme direction. Without orders from any person, he rallied such of the fugitives as would obey him, joined them to a detachment which had not arrived in season to share in the combat, and took possession of Prospect Hill, and there encamped that very night." And with the historian this was the last of "Old Put." But where, in God's name, was Prescott? If he was the supreme commander in the battle, who but he at that awful crisis in the fortunes of the day should have taken the "supreme direction" of affairs, "rallied" the breaking and wasting forces that had fought like demigods all along that open and extended line, and twice vanquished the haughty and powerful foe, and then have led them off the field to a place of safety? What! when the fierce fight at the fence had saved him and his men from capture, fly from his fort as soon as chance permitted, and lie to headquarters in the distance, and leave an "interloper" and "intermeddler," a "coward" and a "traitor" to assume the "supreme direction" and take charge and care of the central and remaining body of the army, who were tired and torn with almost incredible service for their country! And was that the military conduct for one who had been chosen as the chief commander? Or did he or any one else ever cause the alleged rude and reckless usurper of his supreme command to be duly punished for his lawlessness and audacity? And why not? Why? Because he was chief at the retreat and at Prospect Hill, just as he was chief at the beginning of the battle and all through it. He "assumed" nothing after the fight that he had not assumed before it and the fact that he was supreme after the conflict ended is incontestable proof that he was supreme from the first; and this lends an increased interest and attractiveness to the Somerville eminence and its surroundings. For, without him and his selection of the place for encampment, and his "supreme direction," what would have become of the recent celebration, and who would have ever heard the eloquent speeches of Mayor Glines, Governor Bates, Lieutenant-Governor Guild, and Mr. Ayer? Would the flag of the crosses and the stripes, to say nothing of the Connecticut

banner, have been unfurled on the hill as they were, and would Washington have visited the spot as he did, and would all the noted warriors and their soldiers who have been referred to have trod the soil, and would the beautiful park ever have been laid out, and the memorial tower ever have been built? Would Somerville have been what it justly claims to be to-day?

My letter is already much too long, and yet there are certain other associations of the hill of which I fain would write. Putnam had with him while he was first stationed at Cambridgeport two sons, Israel and Daniel. Israel was in the battle, as well as his father. Daniel, who rose to be a prominent and highly esteemed citizen of Connecticut, wished also to accompany the expedition, thinking he might be of some use, though but a boy of fifteen. His father thought he could get on without him, and directed him to stay behind at the Inman House, his own headquarters. The son soon heard of the fight, and was anxious lest his father might have been hurt or killed, but was presently told that he was safe at Prospect Hill, and, accordingly, he went thither at once to find him. Long afterward he gave this account of the discovery: "There I found him about ten o'clock on the morning of June 18, dashing about among the workmen, throwing up intrenchments, and often placing a sod with his own hands. He wore the same clothes he had on when I left him thirty-eight hours before, and affirmed that he had never put them off or washed himself since, and we might well believe him, for the aspect of all bore evidence that he spoke the truth." Surely the scene must have somewhat resembled that of Lechmere Point, to which reference has been made, let go the weather and the thaw.

Putnam and his chief command on that hill were immediately and fully recognized by General Ward and the authorities at Cambridge, as if in that capacity he had brought out from the furnace of affliction the remnant that should be saved. Ward quickly reinforced him, sending him two days after the battle not only "half of the Connecticut forces," but also "one-half by companies" of the regiments of Colonels Nixon, Brewer, Scammans, Gerrish, Mansfield, Woodbridge, and Gardner. So tells us

the Orderly Book of Nathan Stow, from which we cull several particulars more. The General Orders for July 4 stated: That Hon. Artemus Ward, Charles Lee, Philip Schuyler, and Israel Putnam, Esq., are appointed major-generals of the American army by the Continental Congress, and due obedience is to be paid to them as such; and, That all the troops of the several colonies which have been raised, or may hereafter be raised, for the support and defense of the liberties of America are received into the pay and service of the Continental Congress, and are now the troops of the United Provinces of North America, and it is hoped that all distinctions of colonies will be laid aside. The General Orders for July 16 by Major-General Putnam commanded: That to-morrow morning precisely at six o'clock all officers and soldiers in the camp attend on Prospect Hill at the usual place of prayers, there to hear read by Mr. Leonard (chaplain) the manifesto of the Hon. Continental Congress, containing their reasons for taking up arms. Putnam was still in command on Prospect Hill July 18, when he instructed the officers to warn the soldiers to be on parade at four o'clock, and be ready for action at once, as by some movements on Boston Common it appears that they (the enemy) have some intention of coming out. Such proclamations on Prospect Hill, thus early giving expression to the advanced views of freedom and independence for America are a lasting honor to Somerville, and are full worthy to be remembered in connection with Washington's visit there, when January 1, 1776, the flag of "alternate hues" was hoisted in token and publication of "the cementing of the thirteen American colonies in a common bond against British oppression." Nearly six months before, as we have seen, the spirit of liberty was there equally manifest and equally comprehensive in its sweep. Good for Somerville, we say again; and pleasant it is to remember that, while Putnam and Greene were there in command, they were associated together with the "Father of His Country" in the same purposes, aspirations, and endeavors, and all were of one mind and heart.

Prospect Hill encampment presented a busy scene under Putnam's command, as afterward. Washington's first visit to

the encampment was on the seventh of July, five days after his arrival at Cambridge. In General Orders he here approved the sentence of the Court that had dismissed Captain John Callender from further service in the ranks as an officer for alleged cowardice in the battle, but subsequently, when the soldier had greatly distinguished himself for courage and fidelity as a volunteer, he caused the stain to be removed from all the army records. Three days before this visit was the "mournful occasion" of the funeral obsequies of the brave Bunker Hill hero and martyr, Colonel Thomas Gardner, whose regiment belonged to Putnam's forces, and now joined in fitting honors to the memory of their late and lamented commander.

There was constant fear of some approach and attack on the part of the British. The encampment was not a little annoyed by discharges from their floating batteries on the river. While the work of intrenching still went on, there were daily drills or parades, with due inspection of arms and ammunition, and sentinels were ever on duty, so that at any moment all might be ready for action. Sergeants or others were sent forth from time to time to find out and report the state of things at Cambridge, or with the British forces at Bunker Hill; parties, also, for orders from headquarters and for supplies from the neighborhood. Grass was collected for the cattle, soon to be slaughtered as food for the soldiers. Officers were appointed to number and name such members of the regiments as were sick or wounded or dead, or were on furlough or had deserted, whether they had been in the battle or not. The kitchens were examined and kept neat and clean, and strict care was taken that the men should be properly provided for at their meals, while there was a close watch of the sale or use of intoxicating liquors, with a severe punishment of any who should tempt others to partake of them. Cursing and swearing were sternly forbidden, and moral and patriotic lessons were taught and enforced; yet Nathan Stow's *Orderly Book* abounds with many a record which tells of courts-martial for shameful offenses. Among the thousands there on the hill all was stir and vigilance, though there was no occasion for actual fighting; yet it is clear that General

Putnam knew well not only how to build fortifications, but also how to command, maintain law and order, care for all, make right the rule, and win admiring confidence and love.

In what I have written I have said much about Bunker Hill, as well as Prospect Hill, because they really go together as making a single whole. They are so vitally connected with each other that in the best sense they cannot be considered apart. The one story runs into the other, and the latter derives its true significance from the former. It is quite curious or noteworthy how afraid Prescott writers are of the bond between the two, and how prone they are to stop with the battle and to make little or nothing of what took place just after the retreat. Frothingham says in a foot-note that Putnam "retreated with that part of the army that went to Prospect Hill and remained here through the night!" Dr. George E. Ellis, warm friend and grandiloquent eulogist of Prescott, and mortal enemy and vehement abuser of Putnam, leaves the latter out of the account altogether, after having caricatured his matchless service at the rail fence, and simply says this: "The British lay on their arms all night at Bunker's Hill, discharging their pieces against the Americans, who were safely encamped upon Prospect Hill at the distance of a mile!" H. B. Dawson, historian and Englishman, who could never forgive Putnam for rending the American colonies from the British empire as he thought he did, and calls him "traitor" and whatever else of the kind, does not even mention him or Prospect Hill after his long account of the engagement! The reason for all these slights or all this belittling or obscurity is obvious. The "supreme direction" which Bancroft allows Putnam in the retreat, and which he certainly exercised then and on Prospect Hill, and the recognition and reinforcements which he received from headquarters while he was there, are so strong an argument that he was chief before, that such men as Frothingham, Ellis, and Dawson do not like to follow him thither and face the inevitable conclusion that he was also supreme commander of the American forces in the Battle of Bunker Hill, as he himself repeatedly said he was whenever occasion required him to say it; and as innumerable soldiers who fought under

him then and there, and military officers, statesmen, governors, lawyers, jurists, poets, scholars, clergymen, journalists, and college presidents and professors have said it for him for a hundred and twenty-eight years.

The battle ended, he was the one hero of the day. Immensely popular before, he was more than ever a favorite now. The country resounded with his praises. Toasts were drunk to his honor on both sides of the Atlantic. He and Washington dined often together, and were most intimate friends, and he who was "first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen" gave his veteran companion successively the highest commands he had at his disposal; as when, under his authority, Putnam, with his troops, entered and took possession of Boston as soon as the British had been compelled to leave the city, and as afterward he was chief in the New York campaign, at Philadelphia, and elsewhere. Nor do we find that after the battle Washington or the public took any particular notice of Prescott whatever. Yet Prescott was a brave and faithful soldier, though previous to his command of the redoubt on Breed's Hill he had seen but little military service. Later he served under Putnam in New York, and undoubtedly performed his duty there as nobly as he had done it at the fort. During the war he quit the army and returned to the quiet of his own home at Pepperell, where he lived and died, respected and honored to the last by his friends and fellow-citizens and by the people at large. But the contention that when he was colonel of one of the regiments at Cambridge, just before he went with his detachment to Breed's Hill, and when he was surrounded by as many as eight generals and thirty colonels, a large proportion of whom, Putnam included, had had much experience and had gained high merit and distinction in previous wars, Prescott, with his then limited service and fame, was selected out of them all, and jumped over the heads of all these noted and scarred defenders of their country, to be the supreme commander in the daring enterprise close at hand, and in whatever conflict it might involve, is one of the most preposterous claims that ever challenged the attention or assent of sane or intelligent minds. To

those who are inclined to credit the claim, it may kindly be hinted that colonels do not command their superiors in rank, to which it may be added that Colonel Prescott gave no order to General Putnam, from the beginning to the end, but Putnam ordered Prescott and forces all along the line, and was obeyed. And Putnam it was, who, while Prescott was safe in his fort, and never left it until it was taken by the British, braced the provincials in the open to the long and perilous contest by his indomitable spirit, taught doubting England and the world once for all that Americans could and would fight for their liberties, whatever the cost, and made a seeming defeat a real and inestimable victory. It made sure the final triumph, and Franklin, when he heard of it, wrote to his English friends, "England has lost her colonies forever," and she had.

What do all these incontrovertible facts mean? What is the one just and sure interpretation of them? Let us follow no false guides, however learned, eminent, or sincere they may be, but answer the question for ourselves. From time immemorial such men have been on the wrong side in almost every important controversy, historical, scientific, or what not. Time has proved how mistaken they were, whether the subject was slavery, witchcraft, the Ptolemaic theory, the story of Adam and the Fall, or any other. Majorities, however imposing and influential, are not always in the right. The history of Bunker Hill and Prospect Hill, in all its fullness, is a matter of greater moment than some seem to think. Each one must study it impartially as best he can, and decide for himself what is the truth it teaches, assured that the truth will finally prevail.

A. P. Putnam.

Salem, December 30, 1903.

HON. AUSTIN BELKNAP.

The death of Hon. Austin Belknap at the residence of his daughter, Mrs. Roswell C. Downer, in Roxbury, on the ninth of December, 1902, removed from the activities of life one who had for nearly fifty years been a useful and honored citizen of Somerville, a man of unblemished reputation in private and public life, a man in whom there was no guile, who hated deceit, and whose life was open, frank, and honest.

Mr. Belknap was born in Westboro, Mass., July 18, 1819, the son of John and Ruth (Fay) Belknap. His early education was obtained in the district school of Westboro and the Worcester Academy, taking a course in civil engineering in the latter institution. After a brief experience in railway construction, he came to Boston in 1843, entering the produce business, in which he continued until the day before his death, covering a period of nearly sixty years.

Mr. Belknap became a resident of Somerville in 1853. He was a man of studious habits, and his early education was supplemented and broadened by a careful and judicious course of reading and private study, accumulating in a few years a valuable private library. After he was fifty years of age, he began the study of French, soon learning to read in that language with ease. He took a lively interest in municipal affairs, serving the town efficiently and intelligently as a member of the School Committee in '62, '63, and '64; as a member of the last three Boards of Selectmen in '69, '70, and '71. He was a trustee of the Public Library in '73 and '74, and was the third mayor of the city, serving two terms in '76 and '77. During his term of service as mayor, he was actively identified with two important city improvements, the extension of a main line of sewer from Kent street, via Beacon street, Somerville avenue, Mossland street, and Elm street to Davis square, and the completion and dedication of the Broadway park, which was begun under the administration of Mayor Furber. To all the important work done by the city under his administration Mr. Belknap gave his personal attention, preventing the possibility of jobbery and un-

necessary expense to the city, securing as good work as might be done for a private individual. While Mr. Belknap protected the city from dishonesty and corruption in carrying out public improvements, he was broad and wise in his policy.

Mr. Belknap married Miss Jane P., eldest daughter of the late Holloway and Frances (Read) Brigham, of Westboro, by whom he had three children, two of whom survive him, Mrs. R. C. Downer and Robert W. Belknap. Mrs. Belknap died several years before her husband.

For many years Mr. Belknap was active in Free Masonry, being a member of John Abbot Lodge, the Somerville Chapter, and the De Molay Commandery. But, while fond of social life, his chief recreation was found at his own fireside with his beloved books. As we close this hurried outline of a busy life, a life that was not lived in vain, let us quote from Pope, his favorite author:—

“Unblemished let me live, or die unknown,
O grant an honest fame, or grant me none.”

HORACE CARR WHITE.

BY the death of Dr. H. C. White, on Thanksgiving Day, November 26, 1903, Somerville lost one of her best-known and most esteemed citizens. In 1874, when he moved from his native state of Maine, he made his home among us, and from that time, by the practice of his profession, by his services on the school board, and in his more public capacity as a representative in the state legislature, he served this community most wisely and faithfully. The high regard in which he was held by his fellow-citizens was manifested by the large concourse of people that attended his funeral, one of the largest ever known in Somerville. In recognition of his high services as a public-

mindful citizen, and as a fitting tribute to his memory, the flags of the city, by the order of the mayor, were displayed at half-mast.

The funeral was at the Baptist Church on Cross street, of which Dr. White was a consistent and devoted member, and the sermon by his pastor, the Rev. John R. Gow, was in full sympathy with the occasion. No words are more appropriate for this brief sketch of Dr. White's career than those of Mr. Gow, from whom we would quote the following:—

"All the problems in the relations between man and man might be settled if all men would live as wisely, independently, bravely, and unselfishly as Dr. White has lived, and in all the issues there is, after all, but one issue for each of us: whether we will be as true to the example of this good friend of ours as he has ever been to us, and to his Great Examiner.

"We thank God, then, for a man who has given us a good opinion of humanity. We thank Him that the message of the Master has been exemplified before our eyes in one who has sought to do unto others as he would that they should do to him."

As Dr. White was a member of the Somerville Historical Society, it is fitting that the pages of its quarterly publication preserve this outline of a life which nearly reached the allotted limit of three-score years and ten.

Horace Carr White, the son of Gideon and Rhoda (Springer) White, was born in Bowdoin, Me., January 26, 1836. His family early removed to Litchfield, Me., where he attended the Liberal Institute, but on account of trouble with his eyes, he was unable to carry out his plans for a college course. He graduated from the medical department of Bowdoin College in 1859, and after practicing in Lisbon Falls, in 1862 he entered the army as assistant surgeon of the Eighth Maine regiment. When he returned, much broken in health from overwork and exposure, he remained at Lisbon Falls until his removal to Somerville in 1874. For twelve years he was a valuable member of the school board, and he served in the

Massachusetts House of Representatives for the years 1897-'98-'99-1900. During this time he was on various important committees, as the one on metropolitan affairs, of which he was chairman two years. Dr. White was identified with all educational and temperance measures in which the city was interested. His work in leading the movement which resulted in the establishment of the Somerville hospital is well known to the people of this city. Besides being a member of the above-mentioned church, he belonged to several military and medical organizations, and various secret orders.

Dr. White married Miss Mary L. Randall, of Harpswell, Me., who, with two daughters and a son, survives him. The home is on Perkins street.

M. AGNES HUNT.

By Anna Parker Vinal.

M. Agnes Hunt, a member of this society, was born in Southampton, N. Y., in 1839, and died in Somerville November 24, 1903.

Her father, Rev. Samuel Hunt, preached for many years in Franklin, Mass.; he was one of the Abolitionists, and for upholding the cause of the negro was dismissed by his parish. From him and her grandfather, who gave money to found Amherst College, she inherited her strong patriotism; this enabled her as a young girl to send the money given her for a long-coveted black silk dress to the Sanitary Commission when they called for funds during the Civil War.

She was educated in the district and select schools of Franklin, the English and Classical School of Walpole, Mass., and at Ipswich Female Seminary; she excelled in mathematics.

At the age of twenty-two she was called upon to manage her father's household, and also to attend to the duties in parish work

devolving upon the minister's wife, with the result that her health gave way for a time.

She was privileged, as the daughter of an ardent Abolitionist, to meet many noted people, not only at her father's house, but at the home of Asa Fairbanks in Providence, a firm friend of Rev. Mr. Hunt. Through her father, she met Wendell Phillips, Charles Sumner, William Lloyd Garrison, Vice-President Henry Wilson, and many others. In 1873 she came to Somerville, where she identified herself with the Prospect Hill church, and for a number of years was actively interested in its work, filling several important positions.

During the Spanish war she was untiring in working for the relief of the soldiers. She belonged to the Volunteer Aid. Her patriotism led her to be interested in the Historical Society from its formation, and she was a constant attendant at the meetings. Miss Hunt was an extremely energetic woman; her cheerfulness during her last illness made the sick room a place where it was a delight to be. Many friends mourn her loss.

MARY M. McKAY.

In the death of Miss Mary M. McKay of 254 School street, the Historical Society has lost a faithful and devoted member.

Miss McKay was the daughter of the late George and Jane McKay of Charlestown, where she was born sixty years ago. For the past fourteen years she had made her home with her sister, Mrs. James G. Hinckley, of this city. Her death occurred after a five weeks' illness, on Saturday, August 29, 1903. Besides Mrs. Hinckley, two other sisters, Mrs. Jacob T. Hutchinson and Miss Eliza J. McKay, also a member of this society, and a brother, George E. McKay, superintendent of the Boston markets, are left to mourn her loss. The interment was in the family lot at Mt. Auburn.

Miss McKay, by her kind and cheerful disposition, and by her many other admirable qualities of mind and heart, won the esteem and friendship of a large circle of friends in this vicinity.

INDEX

"Accidence, The"	20	Bolbee, France	12
Adams, John	56	Bolton, John, Homestead of	45
Adams, William	34	Bonair Street, Somerville	43, 44
Alden, John	2	Bonner Ave., Somerville	46
Aldersey Street, Somerville	25	Bonner, "Grandma"	47
American Navy, The	81	Bonner, William	47
Ames Street, Somerville	42	Boston Commercial Bulletin, The	6
Amherst College	103	Boston Courier, The	6
Amoskeag, Locks of	50	Boston Evening Transcript, The	16
Andersonville, Ga.	23	Boston & Lowell R. R.	51, 55
Andros, Sir Edmund	38	Boston & Maine R. R.	51
Appleton, —, Cross Street	44	Boston Latin School	20, 32
Arlington, Mass.	15	Boston Traveler, The	2
Army of the Potomac, The	23	Bow Locks and Canal	50, 57
Arnold, General Benedict	86	Bowdoin College	102
Arnold, Mrs. Lilla E.	76	Bowdoin Family, The	12
Atlantic Monthly, The	6	Bowdoin, Me.	102
Auburn Ave., Somerville	44	Bowles, John	34
Austin, Ebenezer	61	Brackenbury, John	35
Ayer, John F.	42, 77, 80, 85, 93	Brackenbury, Katherine	35
Ayers, George W.	22, 23	Bradford, Alden	89
Ayers, John	22, 23	Bradford, William	2
Ayers, Sally D.	23	Braintree, Mass.	19, 33
Ayers, Sally (Page)	22, 23	Brastow Schoolhouse, The	42
Ayers, William	22, 23	Brattle, William	63
Bacon, Mrs. E. A. Lathrop	8, 9, 10, 25	Breed's Hill	90, 98
Bacon, Mrs. E. A. Lathrop, Poems of	9	Brentnall, John, Schoolmaster, 1726	65
Bacon, Rev. Henry	6, 8	Brewer, Col.	94
Bacon, Rev. Henry, Memoir of	9	Brigden, Zechariah	60
Bacon, Henry, Jr.	9, 10	Brigham, Frances (Read)	101
Bailey, Ernest W.	74	Brigham, Holloway	101
Bailey, Joshua	22	Brigham, Jane P.	101
Bailey, Mrs. Joshua	22	Broadway Park	100
Bailey House, The, Perkins Street	44	Broadway, Somerville	43, 44
Baird, Historian	10	Brooks, Elbridge Gerry	7
Baldwin, Loammi	52, 53, 54, 55, 57	Brooks, Elbridge Streeter	7
Ballou, Hosea, President Tufts College	26	Brooks, Elbridge Streeter, Fiction of	7
Bancroft, Historian	92, 97	Brooks, Elbridge Streeter, Works of	7
Barberry Lane	42	Brooks Family, The, Medford	66
Barrell, Joseph	53	Brooks, John	53
Barrett, Samuel, Jr., Schoolmaster, 1720	65	Brooks's History of Medford	61
Bartlett's Address, 1813	60	Brooks, Peter	56
Bateman, —	62	Brooks, Phillips	27
Bates, Gov. John L., Address by	77, 78, 86, 87, 92, 93	Brown, Captain, House of	42
Bay State Colony, The	14	Brown, Rev. Joseph	34
Bedford, Mass.	52	Bull Run, Battle of	9
Belknap, Hon. Austin	100, 101	Bunker, Benjamin	60
Belknap, John	100	Bunker Hill	73 — 99
Belknap, Robert W.	101	Bunker Hill, Battle of	14, 88, 89, 97
Belknap, Ruth (Fay)	100	Bunker Hill Monument	80
Bell, Dr. Luther V.	2	Burgoyne, Gen.	86
Berlin, Germany	11	Burnham, Nathan, Schoolmaster, 1727	65
Berncn, Gabriel	12	Burr, Major John	62
Billerica, Mass.	52, 54	Burr, John Samuel, Jr.	62
Billerica Bridge	54	Burr, Rebecca	62
Billerica Mills	55	Burr, Samuel, Schoolmaster, 1703	62, 63
Binney, Captain Martin	22, 23	Burr, Sarah	62
Binney, Sally (Ayers)	23	Byron, Lord	31
Bird, Charles, Jr.	42	Callendar, Captain John	96
Bishop of London	38	Cambridge, Mass.	15, 82, 86, 88, 89, 91, 92, 96, 98
Blessing of the Bay, The	81	Camp Parole	23
Blodgett, Daniel	14	Canal Project, Result of	49
Blodgett, Samuel	50	Canal System, Plan of	49

- Canterbury, England 16
 Carlisle, Mass. 52
 Carr, Florence E. 10
 Carr, Martin L. 22
 Carter, John 40
 Carter, Sarah (Stowers) 40
 Castle William, Boston Harbor 58, 59
 Central Fire Station, Somerville 42
 Central Hill, Somerville 2
 Central Street, Somerville 42
 Charles, Duke of Orleans 10
 Charles River 55, 86
 Charlestown, Mass. 78, 80
 Charlestown, Bounds of 15
 Charlestown, Burning of 14
 Charlestown, Cemetery in 15
 Charlestown Church 65
 Charlestown Grammar School 19
 Charlestown, History of, Wyman 19, 20, 61, 65
 Charlestown, Incorporation of 15
 Charlestown Navy Yard, The 56
 Charlestown Neck 14, 21, 91
 Charlestown School, The 58
 Charlestown School, First 15
 Charlestown Schools, Early Records of 17
 Charlestown Schools, Regulations Concerning 63
 Charlestown Schoolhouse 21
 Charlestown School in the 17th Century 15, 32
 Charlestown Schools in the 18th Century 58
 Charlestown, Separation of 15
 Charter Street Burying-Ground 40
 Cheever, Elizabeth 20
 Cheever, Ezekiel, Schoolmaster, 1661 19, 20, 21, 32, 37, 39
 Cheever, Ezekiel, Death of 20
 Chelmsford, Mass. 19, 53, 54, 56
 Chelsea, Mass. 42, 66
 Chester Ave., Somerville 42, 45
 Chestnut Isles, England 19
 Christian Examiner, The 3, 89
 Christian Messenger, The 27
 Christian Souvenir, The 3
 Christ's Hospital School, England 20
 Clay Pits, The, Somerville 44
 Clark, Joseph 47
 College Hill 26
 Committee on Historic Sites, Somerville Historical Society 74
 Committee of Safety, The 89, 90, 92
 Concord Bridge 78
 Concord Fight, The 80
 Concord, Mass. 52, 88
 Concord, N. H. 50, 51, 52, 56, 57
 Concord R. R. 51
 Concord River 52, 53, 54, 55
 Condit, Sears 42
 Coney, John 27
 Connecticut Flag, The 80, 87, 93
 Connecticut River 49, 52
 Connecticut, 3rd Regiment of 86
 Continental Army, The 86
 Continental Congress, The 95
 Coos Falls 50
 Corpus Christi, Cambridge, England 16
 Council of War, The 89, 90
 Court Manual, The 15
 Craigie, Andrew 53, 56
 "Cranberry Pickers, The" 6
 Cromwell's Falls 50
 Cross Street, Somerville 44, 45
 Cross Street Universalist Church 26, 27
 Cutler, John, Jr. 35
 Cutler, Nathaniel 60
 Cutler, Timothy 40
 Cutter, Edward 43
 Cutter, Fitch 44
 "Dame Schools," Charlestown 60
 Danforth, Samuel 34
 Dartmouth Street, Somerville 44
 D. A. R., National Society of 7
 D. R., Prospect Hill Chapter 76
 Dauphiny, France 11, 12
 Dawson, H. B., Historian 97
 De Mallet, Antoine 10
 De Molay Commandery 101
 Denmark 10
 Dorchester, Mass. 82
 Downer, Mrs. Roswell C. 100, 101
 Dows, Captain Jonathan 63
 Dows, Nathaniel 38, 41, 61
 Drake, Colonel S. A. 87, 89
 Dudley, Governor 12
 Duxbury, Mass. 16, 62
 Edwards, Thomas 62
 Elector of Saxony 10
 Elliot, Charles D. 74
 Ellis, Rev. George E., D. D. 97
 Emerson, Rev. John, Schoolmaster, 1691 39, 40
 Emerson Genealogy, The 40
 Emerson, Nathaniel (Thomas) 43
 Emmanuel College, Cambridge, England 20
 English and Classical School, Walpole, Mass. 103
 Everett Ave., Somerville 44
 Everett, Edward 1
 Fairbanks, Asa 104
 Fairfield, Conn. 11, 13, 62, 63
 Faneuil Family, The 12
 Farmer, Mrs. Ann 19
 Fernandina, Fla. 23
 Fisher, Caroline M. 27
 Fisher, Mary 16
 Fishkill, N. Y. 15
 Fitch, Sarah 62
 Flanagan, Lewis Cass 4
 Flanagan, Lewis Cass, Works of 4, 5
 Fletcher, Hope 19
 Fletcher, John 19
 Fletcher, William 19
 Flint Street, Somerville 44
 Foss, Sam Walter, Poem by 77, 82, 83, 84
 Forster Schoolhouse, The 44
 Fort Hill, Boston 12
 Fosdick, Margaret 14
 Fosket, Jonathan 13
 Foster, Anne (Brackenbury) 40
 Foster, Isaac 34, 40, 60
 Foster, Hon. Richard, Jr. 40
 Foster, William 40
 Fowle, Eliza 6
 Foye, William 15
 Foxcroft, Thomas 27
 Francis I. of France 10
 Franklin, Benjamin 99
 Franklin Grammar School, Somerville 4
 Franklin, Mass. 103
 Franklin, Statue of 13
 Franklin Street, Somerville 44
 Frazar, General Douglas 2
 Frazar, General Douglas, Works of 3
 Free School, Charlestown 37
 Free Schools, Charlestown, Grant in Aid of 35
 French Church in Boston, The 13
 French and Indian Wars, The 88
 Frigate Nonsuch 65

Frost, Mrs., House of	47	Heyman, Samuel	60, 62
Frothingham, Historian	18, 19, 36, 38, 41, 63	Heymond, Samuel	61
Frothingham's History of Charlestown	16, 36, 37, 38	Highland Avenue, Somerville	22, 45
Frothingham, Nathaniel	36	Hill, Colonel Herbert E.	2
Frothingham, Richard, Jr.	97	Hinckley, Mrs. James H.	104
Frothingham, Samuel	36	Historical Sketch of Old Middlesex Canal	49
Furber, Hon. William H.	100	Hooksett Locks and Canal	50, 57
Galletty Rope-Walk, The	44	Horn Pond, Woburn	53
Gage, General	79	Huguenots, The	10, 11, 12
Gardner, Col.	94, 96	Hunt, M. Agnes	103
Garrison, William Lloyd	104	Hunt, Rev. Samuel	103, 104
Garton, Rev. J. Vanor	76	Hutchinson Collection, The	42
Geary, Captain Benjamin	64	Hutchinson, Mrs. Jacob T.	104
General Court of Massachusetts, The	41, 52	Indian Wars, The	40
General Court of Mass. Colony, The	19	Inman House, The, Cambridge	94
Geneva	10	Ipswich Female Seminary	103
George III.	79	Ipswich, Mass.	20, 40
Gerrish, Colonel	94	Ireland, Shadrach	15
Gilman, Charles E., Town Clerk, Somerville	43, 44	Israel Putnam and Bunker Hill	85
Gilman, Charles E., Farm of	43	Israel Putnam and Prospect Hill	85
Gilman Square, Somerville	43	Jackson, George Russell	6
Gilman Street, Somerville	43, 44	Jaques, Samuel	53, 55
Glen Street, Somerville	44	Jennor (Jenner), Elizabeth	62
Glines, Hon. Edward, Address by	77, 86, 87, 92, 93	John Abbot Lodge	101
Goff's Falls, N. H.	50	Kemble, Miss	4
Goldthwaite, S.	20	Kentucky	7
Goodwin, Xtopher, Jr.	37, 39, 40	Kettell, Deacon Joseph	60
Gore, Christopher	53	King's Chapel, Boston	13, 38
Gould, Thomas	21	King Philip's War	34
Gow, Rev. John R.	102	King William	38
Granary Burial Ground	10	Kirtland, Susanna	33
Grant, General	7	Knapp, Mrs. O. S.	46
Greaves, Thomas	60	Knowlton, Captain	90
Greene, John	19	Ladies' Repository, The	8, 9, 25, 27
Greene, General Nathaniel	78, 86, 87, 95	Lake Champlain	49
Greenville Street, Somerville	45	Lake Sunapee	52
Gridley, Colonel	90	Lake Winnepesaukee	56
Griffin's Falls	50	Landgrave of Hesse	10
Guild, Lieutenant Governor Curtis, Jr.	77, 79, 86, 87, 92, 93	Larion, Johannah	11, 13
Address by	44	Larion, Louis	13
Guild House, The	77	Lathrop, Ellen	20
Hadley, Henry K.	58	Lathrop, Rev. Thomas L.	10
Hadley, Mass.	44, 77	Latin Schoolhouse, Boston	13
Hadley, S. Henry	44	Leathe, Edwin	66
Hadley, Samuel D.	17	Lechmere Point, Cambridge	87, 94
Hale, Robert	52	Lee, General Charles	78, 87, 95
Hall, Andrew	52	Lefevre	10
Hall, Benjamin	56	Leonard, Chaplain	95
Hall, Dudley	42, 53, 56	Lexington, Mass.	6, 8, 73, 78
Hall, Ebenezer	52	Lexington, Battle of	88
Hall, Ebenezer, Jr.	52	Lexington Common	79
Hall, Willis	52	Libbey, Mrs. Katherine B. W.	66, 67
Hammond, Lawrence, Recorder	34	Libbey, Mrs. Katherine B. W., Writings of	66, 67, 68
Hancock, Governor John	52	Liberal Institute, Litchfield, Me.	102
Hancock, —, Schoolmaster, 1724	65	Lincoln, Abraham	7
Harper's Magazine	3	Lincoln Schoolhouse, Somerville	27
Harpsswell, Me.	103	Linn, Abigail	13
Harrington Family, The	46	Lisbon Falls, Me.	102
Harvard College	2, 8, 19, 33, 34, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 65	Litchfield, Me.	102
Harvard College, Charlestown Graduates	60	Literary Men and Women of Somerville	1, 25, 66
of Previous to 1701	60	Little Washington Village, N. C.	22
Harvard Graduates, Sibley	37	Long, Joshua	60
Haven, George	47	Long, Michael	37
Hawes, Frank Mortimer	15, 32, 58	Longfellow, Professor	8
Hay, William, Schoolmaster, 1721	65	Lord, Joseph	60
Hayden, Joseph O.	6, 74	Loring, Mrs. Ernest L.	22
Hayes, John S.	2	Louis XIV.	11
Hayes, John S., Addresses of	2	Lovell's Island	17, 35, 39, 40
Hearse House, The	42	Lowden, Constable	17
Hertford County, England	19	Lowe, Mrs. Martha Perry	22
		Lowe, Mrs. Martha Perry, Works of	68, 69, 70, 71

Lowell, Mass.	49, 51	Minute Men, The	79
Lowell R. R., The	43	Mistick Side	15
Lower Canada	49	Mistick Side Schoolhouse	64
Lucas, England	19	Montreal	49
Lucas, Elizabeth	61	Moore, Abraham M.	43
Lynde, Lieutenant Colonel Joseph	60	Moor's Falls	50
Lynde, Mary	61	Morley, Catharine	19
Lynde, Nicholas	60	Morley, John, Schoolmaster, 1652	19
Lyons, France	11	Morley, Ralph	19
Lyrion, Jane	13	Morris, Martha	14
Macon, Ga.	23	Morton, Nicholas	60
Maidstone, Kent, England	16	Moulton's Point	90
Makerwhit, Elizabeth	13	Mount Pleasant Street, Somerville	44
Malden, Mass.	15, 64, 79, 81	Mousall, Ralph	17
Mallet, Andrew, Son of Andrew	14	Moylan, Colonel Stephen	87
Mallet, Elizabeth, Daughter of Andrew	14, 15	Moylan's Dragoons	87
Mallet, Ephraim	14	Munroe, Charles	44
Mallet, Ephraim, Son of Ephraim	15	Munroe Estate, The	45
Mallet Family, Gravestones of	14	Munroe, Louisa	45
Mallet, Isaac, Son of Andrew	14	Munster, Ireland	65
Mallet, Jean, Legacies of	14	Mystic Pond	53
Mallet, Martha, Daughter of Andrew	14	Mystic River	52, 56, 79, 82, 86, 90
Mallet, Mary, Daughter of Andrew	14	Myles (Miles) Samuel, Schoolmaster, 1684	37, 38
Mallet, Michael, Son of Andrew	15		
Mallet, Phoebe, Daughter of Andrew	14	Nashua & Lowell R. R.	56
Manakin, Va.	50, 51	Nashua River	50
Manchester, N. H.	42	Nashua Village	50, 51
Mandell, John	91	Nathan Tufts Park	66
Mansfield, Col.	24	Naval Academy, Annapolis, Md.	23
Mansfield, —, Schoolmaster	94	Navigation on the Merrimac	49
Marshall Street, Somerville	44	Necrology Committee, Report of	22
Maryland, Riflemen of	80	Neighborhood Sketch, No. 6	42
Massachusetts Bay Colony	81	Newbury, Mass.	40
Massachusetts Senate	22	Newell, John	36
M. V. M. 5th Regiment, Company B	22	New England Bank, Boston	43
M. V. M. 24th Regiment, Company D	23	"New England," Neal	42
Mather, Dr. Cotton	20, 33	"New England's Crisis," Thompson	34
Mather, Samuel	34	New Haven, Conn.	20
May Pole, The, Charlestown	38	New Rochelle, N. Y.	12, 13
McKay, Eliza J.	104	Nixon, Col.	94
McKay, George	104	Normandy, France	10, 12
McKay, George E.	104	North, Charles H.	45
McKay, Jane	104	North Church, Boston	38
McKay, Mary M., Death of	104	North Chelmsford, Mass.	55
Medford Bridge	54	North End School, Boston	62
Medford, Mass.	15, 53, 55, 56	North Weymouth, Mass.	4
Medford River	53, 54	Norton, John	34
Medford Street, Somerville	42	Nowell, Alexander	60
Merrill's Falls	50	Nowell, Samuel	60
Merrimac Canals, Abandonment of	51	New York City	7
Merrimac River	19, 49 — 57	New York Independent, The	6
Merrimac River, Canals of	49	Officers Somerville Historical Society	24, 48, 72
Mico, Ann	13	"Old Landmarks of Middlesex"	87
Middlesex Canal, The	49, 50, 51, 52, 57	Old Middlesex Canal, Historical Sketch of	49
Middlesex Canal, Act of Incorporation of	52	Old Mill, The	13, 66, 81
Middlesex Canal, Aqueducts of	58	Old Pound, The	26
Middlesex Canal, Bridges of	58	Oliver Street, Somerville	44
Middlesex Canal, Charter of	52	"Only A Keepsake"	9
Middlesex Canal, Cost of	58	Otis Street, Somerville	44
Middlesex Canal, Dimensions of	58	Oxford, Mass.	12
Middlesex Canal, Laborers, Pay of	58	Paine, William	64
Middlesex Canal, Lock of	58	Parker, Ebenezer, Schoolmaster, 1725	65
Middlesex Canal, Meeting of Directors of	53	Parks, Thomas	38
Middlesex Canal, Opening of	49	Payson, Prudence	33
Middlesex Canal, Proprietors of	52	Pearl Street, Somerville	44
Middlesex Village	49, 57	Pellock's Island	18
Middletown, Conn.	19	"Pencilings," Somerville Journal	5, 6
Millford, Conn.	13	"Peninsula, The," Charlestown	15
Miller, James	79	Pennsylvania, Riflemen of	80
Mills, Samuel	43, 44	Perkins, Luke	36
Miles, Rev. John	37	Perkins Street, Somerville	44
Miles (Myles), Samuel, Schoolmaster, 1684	37, 38	Philadelphia, Penn.	7
		Phillips, Lieutenant Eleazer	4

- Phillips, Wendell 104
 Phips, Samuel, Schoolmaster, 1674 34, 36,
 38, 41, 60
 Phipps, Emma 61
 Phipps, Katherine (Brackenbury) 35
 Phipps, Captain Samuel 61, 63
 Phipps, Solomon 21, 34
 Pillsbury, Harry N. 66
 Pillsbury, L. B. 66, 74
 Pillsbury, Mrs. Mary A. 66
 Piscataquog River 50
 Piscataquog Village 50
 Plymouth Colony, The 81
 Plymouth, Mass. 7
 Plymouth Rock 78
 Pomeroy, General Seth 90
 Pomfret, Conn. 88
 Poole, Captain Jonathan 76
 Pope School, The 46
 Porter, Jonathan 52, 53
 Potomac Canals, The 54
 Pottery, The, Somerville 44
 Powder House, The 13, 81
 Prescott, Col. 86, 89, 90, 91, 93, 98, 99
 Prescott Street, Somerville 22, 42
 Pritchard Family, The 47
 Private Schools, Charlestown 60
 Prospect Hill 15, 25, 73, 92
 Prospect Hill Church 104
 Prospect Hill Line of Intrenchments, Som-
 erville, Marking of 82
 Prospect Hill Monument 82, 85
 Prospect Hill Park Celebration, The 73
 Prospect Hill Park, Dedication of 73
 Prospect Hill Park, Dedication Programme
 of 77
 Prospect Hill Tower, Commemorative
 Tablets 74, 75, 76
 Prospect Hill Schoolhouse 46, 47
 Prospect Street, Somerville 47
 Putnam, Rev. Dr. A. P. 85
 Putnam, Daniel 94
 Putnam, General Israel 73 — 99
 Putnam, Israel, Jr. 94
 Putnam's Flag 86
 Quarry Hill 81
 Queen Mary 38
 Quincy, Mass. 7, 56
 "Rainbow, The" 26
 Randall, Mary L. 103
 Reading, Mass. 15
 Reed, General 90
 Reformation The 10
 Rehoboth, Mass. 38
 Rehoboth Baptist Church 38
 Revere, Paul 27, 78
 Revocation, The 10
 Revolutionary War, The 15, 79
 Richardson's Mill 54
 Robinson, Martha 15
 "Rose of Sharon, The" 9, 25, 27
 Rouen, France 11
 Roxbury, Mass. 100
 Runey, Horace 44
 Runey, James S. 45
 Runey, John 44, 45
 Runey, John, House of 44
 Runey, Mrs. Maria M. 45
 Russell, Daniel 60
 Russell, Frank 45
 Russell, James, Recorder 36
 Russell, Thomas 53
 Rymes, Christopher E. 22
 Saint Lawrence River 49, 52
 Salem, Mass. 40
 Sanborn, David, House of 47
 Sanborn, David, Jr., House of 47
 Sanborn, Mrs. David 47
 Sandwich, England 16
 Sanitary Commission, The 103
 Saratoga 86
 Sargent Ave., Somerville 44
 Sawyer, Mrs. Caroline M. 27
 Sawyer, Mrs. Caroline M., Poems of 27, 28,
 29, 30, 31
 Sawyer, Dr. T. J. 27
 Scammans, Col. 94
 School Near Reading, First Outside "The
 Peninsula" 64
 School, First, Charlestown 15
 School Fund, Charlestown, Beginnings of 17
 Schoolhouse, Town Hill, Description of 64
 School Street, Boston 13
 School Street, Somerville 44-
 Scituate, Second Parish of 16
 Scott, Mrs. Julia H. 27
 Schuyler, Philip 95
 Sedgwick, Major 17, 18
 Sewall, Judge 19, 20
 Sewall, Samuel 34
 Shedd Place, The 46, 47
 Shepard, Isaac F. 3
 Shepard, Rev. Thomas 32, 34
 Ship Hercules 18
 Siege of Boston 80
 Sigourney Family, The 12
 Simsbury, Conn. 19
 Skilton, George 43
 Skilton, John 43
 Skilton Place, The 43
 Sodegonock 19
 Somerville Chapter, F. A. M. 101
 Somerville During Siege of Boston 81
 Somerville Historical Society 1, 73, 74,
 77, 81, 85, 102, 104
 Somerville Historical Society, Officers of
 24, 48, 72
 Somerville Hospital 103
 Somerville Journal 5, 6, 76, 85
 Somerville, Mass. 15
 "Somerville Past and Present" 37
 Somerville Public Library 22
 Somerville Water Board 22
 Southampton, N. Y. 103
 "Spinning Schools," Charlestown 60
 Sprague, Ralph 16
 Stark, General 90
 Starr, Comfort 60
 State House, Boston 15
 Stedman, John 62
 Stilson, William 17
 Stone Building, The 46
 Stone Family, The, House Owned by 46
 Stoneham, Mass. 15
 Stoneham, Mass., Set off, 1725 64
 Storer, Ebenezer 53
 Stow, Elizabeth (Biggs) 19
 Stow, John 19
 Stow, Nathan, Orderly Book of 95, 96
 Stow, Rev. Samuel, Schoolmaster, 1651 18, 19
 Stowers, Joanna 40
 Stowers, Richard 40
 Stratford, Conn. 13
 Stratton, John 16
 Sudbury, Mass. 52
 Sudbury, Mass., Causeway 52
 Sullivan, General 78, 87
 Sullivan, James 49, 52, 53, 57

Sullivan, John Langdon	57	Walpole, Mass.	103
Sumner, Charles	8, 104	War of 1812, Effect of on Middlesex Canal	57
Swan, Caleb	52	Ward, Hon. Artemus	95
Swan, Mary (Lamb)	58	Ward, General	89, 92, 94
Swan, Samuel	52, 53	Ward, Robert, Sr.	65
Swan, Thomas, Schoolmaster, 1700	41	Ward, Robert, Schoolmaster, 1719	65
Swan, Thomas	58, 59	Warren Institution for Savings	43
Swan, Dr. Thomas	58	Washington, General	78, 94, 95, 98
Sweden	10	Washington Street, Somerville	41, 46, 47
Sweet, Constable	17	" Washington Street as It Was "	46
Sweet, Colonel Samuel	89	Watch Tower, Charlestown	17
Sycamore Street, Somerville	44	Waterways, Inland, Mass.	52
Symms's River	53, 54	Webster, Daniel	56
Synames, Zechariah	60	Weiss, Charles	11
Tarbox, Dr. Increase N.	92	Weld, Thomas	34
Taylor, George, Schoolmaster, 1722	65	Wendell, Oliver	50
Thacher, Peter	31	Wenham, Mass.	65
Thompson, Anna	33	Westboro, Mass.	100, 101
Thompson, Benjamin, Schoolmaster, 1631,	32, 33, 34	West Killingly, Conn.	3
Thompson, Samuel	53, 55	Weston Family, The, Reading	66
Thompson, Susanna	33	Weston, Samuel	54, 55
Thompson, Rev. William	33	West Somerville Baptist Church	76
Thorning, Nancy	6, 25	White, Gideon	102
Thorp, Ira	45	White, Dr. Horace Carr	101, 102
Thurston Street, Somerville	44	White, Rhoda (Springer)	102
Topsham, Me.	15	Whittemore, Joseph	61, 62
Town Hill	21, 34, 63	Whittier, John G.	5, 17
Town Hill School	39	Williams, Charles	44
Town Pound, The	42	Willoughby, Francis	17
Towne Residence, The	44	Wilmington, Mass.	54
Treadway, Josiah	39	Wilson, Henry	104
Tufts College	26	Wilson, Martha	14
Tufts College Divinity School	27	Wind-mill Hill, Charlestown	17
Tufts, Peter, Jr.	61	Windsor, Vt.	52
Tufts, Thomas, Schoolmaster, 1703	61	Winter Hill Congregational Church	2
Tylor, Edward	34	Winthrop, Governor	1
Tyngsboro, Mass.	56	Winthrop, James	53
Tyngs Island	50, 57	Wiscassee Falls, Canal at	50, 57
Union Flag, The	93, 95	Wiscassee Locks	50, 57
Union Flag, Raising of, on Prospect Hill	78	Wissell, —, Schoolmaster	61
Union Locks and Canal	57	Wiswell, Rev. Ichabod	62
Union Square, Somerville	46, 47	Wiswell (Wiswall), Peleg, Schoolmaster,	62
Unitarian Church, The	4	1705	62
United Provinces of North America, The	95	Wiswell, Priscilla (Peabody)	62
Unity Club, The	4	Witherell, Rev. William, Schoolmaster,	61
" Universalist, The "	8	1636	16
Veazie, William	43	Witherell, Rev. William, Compensation of	14, 53, 54
Veazie, William, House of	43	Woburn, Mass.	45
" Ventilation of Schoolhouses, The "	2	Wood, Alexander, Place of	94
Vieaux, Daniel	14	Woodbridge, Col.	100
Vinal, Anna Parker	103	Worcester Academy	31
Virginia	7	Wordsworth	62
Virginia, Riflemen of	80	Wyer, Robert	19
Wade, Jonathan, Jr.	58	Wyman, Constant (Starr)	65
Wade, Prudence	58	Wyman's History of Charlestown	19, 20, 61, 65
Walker, —	46	Yeaton, Herbert Pierce	49
Walnut Hill	26	Yorkshire, England	11
Walnut Street, Somerville	25, 27, 43, 44	Young Men's Christian Association, Boston	4
		Youth's Companion, The	3

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOLUME III.

April, 1904

TO

January, 1905

Published by
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY
Somerville, Mass.



Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1904

Vol. III

No. 1

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE OLD MIDDLESEX CANAL (concluded)	<i>Herbert Pierce Yeaton</i> 1
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS IN THE 18TH CENTURY (continued)	<i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> 11
ALBERT CLIFFORD TUFTS	<i>Edward C. Booth</i> 20
NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NO. 7	<i>Harriet A. Adams</i> 22

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. III.

APRIL, 1904.

NO. 1.

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE OLD MIDDLESEX CANAL.

By Herbert Pierce Yeaton.

[Concluded.]

THE CANAL began at Middlesex Village, on the Merrimac river in the town of Chelmsford, and was lifted through a connected flight of three locks, passing under the main street over an aqueduct across the brook—near which are some quaint old houses erected by the proprietors for the use of their employes—and through the long swamp to River Meadow brook, also crossed by aqueduct. Thence it was continued to Billerica, where it entered the Concord river by a stone guard lock, with a floating tow path, and passed out on the southern side through another stone guard lock. The canal is still used by the Talbot mills at North Billerica for the supply of water for power, and in this connection they have retained one of the lock gates, thus saving for us one of the best preserved and most interesting features of the old canal. On the south bank of the Concord river an extensive cutting through rocks was necessary. The Shawsheen river flows through a deep and narrow valley, and the stone work for the aqueduct constituted perhaps the most imposing structure on the canal. Two end abutments and a central pier, all stone, supported a wooden truck or box about 180 feet long, elevated thirty feet above the river, and of sufficient width and depth. The abutments and pier remain undisturbed to this day, with some decaying fragments of the oaken truck still clinging to the pier. The highway and electric car line pass within a few feet of this monument.

Half a mile further south was Nichols' lock, a portion of which still remains as a part of a cellar wall. Mr. Nichols had charge of this lock for a great many years. He was a successful farmer, and, in addition, kept an excellent inn for the accommodation of travelers on the canal. There were many of these, and Nichols' was a favorite place for dinner or a night's lodging. In Wilmington the canal passed through wide, boggy meadows, where the bed sank some sixty feet; crossed the Maple Meadow brook near the poor farm by another aqueduct, of which the remains are very picturesque; and then made an abrupt bend around the foot of a hill. This bend was called the Oxbow. A mile further south the canal entered the town of Woburn, passing within a short distance of the house of Loammi Baldwin. Just to the north of Woburn station a picturesque view of the canal may be had from the railroad. The canal has here been transformed into a duckpond, the width being preserved, but each end of the pond being formed by a dam and the railroad embankment. The canal crossed the swamp, where great quantities of earth were sunk in forming the bed and side banks, and passed to the rear of the present public library building and under the road near Wilson's Tavern. This tavern has since been the homestead of the late Ruel Carter, and was destroyed by fire about 1886. The canal passed through Horn pond, where there was a very important engineering feature, and known as Horn pond, or Stoddard locks. At this point there was a descent of fifty feet by three sets of double stone locks, the middle set being separated from that above and below by a basin-line expansion or widening of the canal, by which the draft of water by locking was equalized. Two of these locks were of hammered granite. These locks were so near Boston, the journey thither in the packet boat, "General Sullivan," was such a pleasant one, the view of the canal and lake was so picturesque and interesting, that the place speedily became a popular resort. Pleasure boats plied the lake, Kendall's Boston brass band and the Brigade band of Boston rendered sweet harmony, and the crowds wandered from the groves to the lake and back to the canal, where shots of lumber-rafts and canal-boats laden with cargoes were

continually passing through the locks. So popular did the place become that in 1838 the Horn Pond House was leased for \$700 for that year.

After passing out of the Horn Pond locks, the canal continued on down to the Horn Pond brook, crossing it at grade by means of waste weirs, which remain to this day in a fair state of preservation. In Winchester the canal passed through Gardner locks, located at the West side of the village, and on through to Mystic pond, crossing the narrow upper arm of the pond over a stone aqueduct. The bed of the canal is plainly visible here, and it is hoped the bed will remain untouched while the March of Progress is still moving on, converting the shores of Mystic pond into a beautiful boulevard. For something over a mile the canal lay within the grounds of the Brooks estate in West Medford. Here stands a beautiful monument, that of the handsome elliptical stone arch, built by George Rumford Baldwin, son of Loammi Baldwin, to convey a farm road over the canal, and considered by engineers to be one of the most graceful structures of the sort in New England. It is plainly visible as one is journeying along by the Brooks farm in the electric cars.

The line of the old canal is where Boston avenue is now situated, passing through Gibson's lock and the aqueduct over the Mystic river, at a point where the new stone bridge now is, then turning to the east the canal passed under the bridge of the Lowell road,—the wing walls of this bridge are yet plainly visible,—and on past the Royall House, where the canal passed under Main street and sent off a branch to the river, for the benefit of the ship-yards of Medford and Charlestown; and so on through the Mystic trotting park to the base of Winter hill, Somerville. From this point the canal followed the line of the high land around to the short bend in the Mystic river, where Dunning's coal wharf is at present located; then to the south, through nearly the centre of the Broadway park; around the base of Mount Benedict,—now nearly dug away,—across the foot of Austin street, where the gate-house may still be seen; then nearly parallel to Main street, Charlestown, to the Neck, where it passed under Main street, through a lock and into the mill-

pond. Most of the cargoes were loaded here, but for those wishing carriage to Boston there was a lock with double gates working either way, according to the state of the tide, for admission into the Charles river. Once in the river, it was an easy matter to reach any of the city wharves; but there was also an extension of the canal through what is now Haymarket square—Canal street being directly alongside—following nearly the lines of Blackstone street to the harbor, near what is now North Market street. Nearly all of the stone for Quincy market was brought over this route. On the map of 1812, in the Old State House in Boston, the canal can be traced under Cross, Hanover, and Ann—now North street—along Canal street.

It is difficult to ascertain the whole number of boats employed at any one time. Many were owned and run by the proprietors of the canal, and many were constructed and run by private parties who paid the regular tolls for whatever merchandise they carried. The original toll was placed at twopence per ton per mile; it was afterward, by Act of Legislature, placed at one-sixteenth of a dollar per ton per mile for goods carried in the boats, and the same for every ton of timber floated in rafts. The actual rates ranged from one to two dollars per gross ton for the twenty-seven miles from Boston to Lowell. Boats belonging to the same parties were conspicuously numbered and lettered, and private boats, of which there were many, were painted with such designs as to be easily recognized, as in the case of freight cars of to-day. The luggage or merchandise boats, of which there are probably none in existence, were peculiarly constructed to meet the requirements of canal navigation, and the mode of propulsion was as peculiar as their model. They were about seventy-five feet long, nine feet wide in the middle, and a little narrowed at the ends; flat-bottomed across the full width, but the bottom sloped or rounded up from near the mid-length of the boat, both towards the stem and stern, so that while the sides were level on top and about three feet deep at mid-length they were only a foot or less in depth at either end. A load of twenty tons would make the boats draw two feet or more near the middle, while the bottom would be

out of the water at each end. They were built of two-inch pine planks spiked on to small oak cross-joints and side knees, and had heavy oak horizontal timbers at each end. The sides were vertical and without cross thwarts, except what was called the mast board, a thick oak plank securely fastened across on top from side to side a little forward of the centre of the boat. The seams between the planks were calked with oakum and pitched.

The rudder was a long steering oar pivoted on the centre of the cross frame of the stern, so as to afford a good leverage for guiding the unwieldy craft. The blade was about eighteen inches wide and ten feet long, and trailed in the water behind the boat. There were also three large scull oars about sixteen feet long, with six-inch blades. Three setting poles or pike poles, as they are sometimes called (stout, straight, round poles, wrought out of tough and spongy ash about fifteen feet long, nearly two inches in diameter, and shed at one end with a long iron point), completed the propelling outfit.

The crew consisted of a skipper and two bowmen. In going down the Merrimac river the scull oars were used, and when there was a fair wind a sail was hoisted. In going down the river, the bowmen took positions close to either side of the boat facing the bow and about six feet from it, and each worked his oar against a thole-pin placed in the opposite gunwale, the oar handles crossing so that they were necessarily worked simultaneously. The skipper also had his oar, which he worked in a similar way when his attention was not wholly taken up in steering. When the boats arrived at Middlesex Village, they were then towed to Charlestown by horses, frequently without a driver, in which case the man at the rudder kept a small pile of stones or green apples ready for the encouragement of the horse.

In mid-summer, when the river was low, only about half a full load could be carried. Three boats each way a week were run. The fare from Boston to Middlesex was seventy-five cents, and from Middlesex to Lowell six and one-quarter cents. A stage met the boats at Middlesex to carry passengers to Lowell. The pay for a boatman in 1830 was \$15 per month. Luggage or merchandise boats made two and one-half miles per hour, while

passage boats made four miles. The time required to go from Boston to Lowell was about twelve hours, and to Concord, N. H., from seven to ten days. Between Boston and Lowell the usual time for freight boats was eighteen hours up and twelve hours down.

Of the passage boats there were at first two, one running up and one down daily. Later, when the amount of travel proved insufficient to warrant two boats, one was removed, and the "Governor Sullivan" ran alone. This was a boat on the style of the Erie canal-boats, though somewhat lighter, with a covered cabin over the whole length, except for the standing room at each end. The cabin was provided with seats, and was upholstered much as the horse cars of a decade ago. In its day the "Governor Sullivan" was considered a model of comfort and elegance. When the feverish haste born of the locomotives and telegraph had not yet infested society, a trip over the canal in the passenger packet "Governor Sullivan" must have been an enjoyable experience. Protected by iron rules from the danger of collision, undaunted by squalls of wind, realizing, should the craft be capsized, that he had nothing to do but walk ashore, the traveler speeding along the leisurely pace of four miles per hour had ample time for observation and reflection. Seated in summer under a spacious awning, he traversed the valley of the Mystic, skirting the picturesque shores of Mystic pond. Instead of a foreground of blurred landscapes, vanishing ghostlike, ere its features could be fairly distinguished, soft bits of characteristic New England scenery, cut clear as cameos, lingered caressingly on his vision.

A large amount of lumber was being used during this period by the ship-yards on the Mystic river, and nearly all of it being rafted down the canal. By the regulations, these rafts could not be larger than seventy-five feet by nine and one-half feet; but a number of rafts could be banded together by slabs pinned between them. A band of seven to ten rafts required five men, including the driver; four rafts required four men, and three rafts three men. These rafts were unpinned and sent through the locks separately, and then again united. The rafts

were drawn by yoked oxen, a single yoke drawing no less than 100 tons of timber, a load requiring eighty teams on the common road.

According to the rules of the corporation, boats of the same class going in the same direction were not allowed to pass each other. Repair boats had the precedence over everything, then came passage boats, luggage or merchandise boats, and lastly rafts. Landing and loading places were established at the mill-pond in Charlestown, in Medford, Woburn, Wilmington, Billerica, and Chelmsford. No goods were allowed to be unloaded or loaded at any other places without a special permit from the agent, this being a precaution against damage to the banks. Racing was prohibited. Whenever a boat approached a lock, a horn was sounded to attract the lock-tenders' attention. No horns were sounded on Sunday, although traveling was permitted. Navigation ceased at night on account of the danger of damaging the canal; so at every series of locks there was a tavern. Two of the most important taverns of the time were the Horn Pond House in Woburn and the Bunker Hill Tavern in Charlestown.

To the people who lived near the banks the canal was a source of pleasure, and was made serviceable in many ways. Its clear waters like a silver thread through the landscape added to the natural charm and the beauty of the delightful scenery. The wide tow-path was skirted with a generous growth of shrubbery and dotted with wild flowers, which made it the boulevard of the town. Sunday afternoons "fellers with their best girls" promenaded along the tow-path. Many were those who left the heat of the city for country air, just as now-a-days Franklin park affords recreation for many. Picnic parties came and camped on its shores. The Horn Pond House in Woburn was the most important house on the route of the canal. The proprietor was the famous Robert McGill, and had a reputation throughout New England. It was the summer resort of Boston and the surrounding country, and on a summer's day the business done was enormous, people coming by boat and carriages, and as many as 100 vehicles have been counted there in a single Sunday.

In the early spring the water would be drawn off from the canal to allow the men to find breaks in the bank caused by the beaver and muskrat, which were continually making holes, thus letting the water out, frequently doing great damage to the surrounding country. The boys would take advantage of this time and search for articles lost overboard, and it was common to find valuables. When the water was let on every boy and girl would be on hand to watch it and try and keep up with the head of the stream. As an avenue for skating it was unsurpassed, and a spin to Woburn and beyond was of frequent occurrence.

The methods of receiving, transporting, and delivering freight were very similar to those of the present day: a way-bill or pass-port accompanied the goods. Freight charges were paid on removal of the property, and in case of delayed removal, a wharfage or demurrage charge was added.

Meanwhile Caleb Eddy, who assumed the agency of the corporation in 1825, rebuilt the wooden locks and dams of stone. With the accession of business brought by the corporation at Lowell, the prospect for increased dividends in the future was extremely encouraging. The "Golden Age" of the canal appeared close at hand, but the fond hopes of the proprietors were once more destined to disappointment. Even the genius of James Sullivan had not foreseen the locomotive. In 1829 a petition was presented to the legislature for the survey of a road from Boston to Lowell. It was at the house of Patrick T. Jackson, Esq., at 22 Winter street, Boston, where the first step was taken for the organization of a company to build the Boston & Lowell railroad. A committee of the canal was then quickly chosen to draw up for presentation to the General Court a remonstrance of the proprietors of the Middlesex canal against the grant of a charter to build a road from Boston to Lowell. Notwithstanding the pathetic remonstrance of the canal proprietors, the legislature incorporated the road, and refused compensation to the canal. Even while the road was being built, the canal directors did not seem to realize the full gravity of the situation. They continued the policy of replacing wood with stone, and made every effort to perfect the service in all its details, and as late as

1836 the agent recommended improvements. The amount of tonnage continued to increase, and the very ties used in the construction of the railroad were boated, it is said, to points most convenient for the workmen.

The disastrous competition of the road was beginning to be felt. The board of directors waged a plucky warfare with the railroad, reducing tariff on all articles, and almost abolishing it on some, till the expenditures of the canal outran its income; but steam came out triumphant. Even sanguine Caleb Eddy became satisfied that larger competition was vain, and set himself to the difficult task of saving fragments of the inevitable wreck. Business grew rapidly less with the canal after the Nashua & Lowell railroad opened. The country merchants fully appreciated the speed and certainty of the railroad, in spite of the somewhat higher freight rates. Caleb Eddy proposed to abandon the canal for transportation and convert it into a canal for supplying Boston with water. Boston had a population at this time (1843) of about 100,000, and was still dependent on wells for its water supply. Most of the wells were badly contaminated, some being little short of open sewers. Mr. Eddy's plan consisted in abolishing the levels between Billerica and Middlesex Village and Woburn and Charlestown, conducting the water of the canal from Woburn by thirty-inch iron pipes to a reservoir on Mount Benedict in Somerville, thence to be distributed over Boston, and possibly Charlestown and Cambridge. The water from the Concord river was analyzed by Dr. Charles T. Jackson, Professor John W. Webster, of Harvard University, S. L. Dana, of Lowell, and A. A. Hayes, of Roxbury, and by all declared to be pure, soft, and eminently suitable for the purpose. The scheme was, however, not successful, and in 1845 Caleb Eddy resigned his position. Stock fell to \$150, and in 1846 the canal was abandoned and the property was sold for \$130,000, and the amount divided among the stockholders. On April 4, 1852, the last canal-boat was run on the canal by Joel Dix, of Billerica.

By conveyances made in 1832, the company reserved the right to use the land for canaling purposes; perhaps they

thought the railroad would not be successful, but they soon gave up such thoughts, if they entertained them; and on October 3, 1859, the Supreme Court issued a decree that the proprietors had "forfeited all their franchises and privileges by reason of non-feasance, non-user, misfeasance, and neglect." Thus the corporation was forever extinguished, and went out like a spark.

The canal was not a great financial success, owing to the large sum of money spent in its construction and the continued expense in keeping its bridges, locks, boats, and banks in repair.

To the student interested in noting the actual footprints of progress, old Middlesex Village, adjoining Lowell, and which flourished before the latter was thought of, furnishes subjects for contemplation. In the now quiet hamlet, where trade was once active and manufacturing kept many busy, still stands the office of the collector of the old Middlesex canal. It is a very small structure, and in very good repair, and is surrounded by traces of the enterprise that called it into being. (A few rods away to the north runs the Merrimac river, skirted by the Lowell & Nashua railroad—now a part of the Boston & Maine. The latter stands like a sentry, as it were, forbidding the corpse of the old canal it has slain to rise again; yet, even in death, the old Middlesex canal is remembered by its ancient friend, the Merrimac, whose waters ebb and flow in a narrow culvert connecting the river with the shrub-grown valley which marks the bed of the almost forgotten canal.) The door of this office is unlocked by a huge key, suggestive of other days. The interior is divided into two apartments, one of which was reserved for the collector, and the other for the boatmen and those requiring passports. The little window through which the passports were handed is still there, and not a pane of it disturbed. South of the collector's office stands a tall, Lombardy poplar, another valuable relic, for it calls to mind the banks studded with these odd-looking trees, whose roots once gave stability to the shores of the canal. Several other buildings of interest still stand in historic Middlesex.

The canal is now well defined through the country as one is traveling on the road to Lowell. At Medford the Woburn

sewer runs along one portion of its bed, the Spot pond water pipes another. At Mystic lake the new boulevard has taken possession of the old bed. At points, the old tow-path is now a part of the highway, at another it survives as a cow-path or woodland road. At one point it marks the course of the defunct Mystic Valley railroad. At Wilmington, the stone sides of a lock have become the walls of a dwelling-house cellar, and where once the merry shout of the boatmen was heard bringing the up-country supplies to the city, the rumble and whistle of its successor, the railroad train, thunders past on its hurried journey.

Steam at last drove the canal-boat from the field, and about fifty years ago the canal gave up business and disappeared into the darkness of the past, to be forever forgotten except in name.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS IN THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

By Frank Mortimer Hawes.

[Continued.]

MR. BARRETT probably did not teach longer than the time specified, as Wyman says that the next incumbent of the office, Joseph Simson, taught from 1721 to 1724.

May 15, 1721. In addition to the master's salary of £60 for the coming year, £3 was voted for firewood for the school. As this is the first time the subject of wood is mentioned in this form, we may infer that previous to this date, as in other towns at that time, the fuel for the school had been contributed by the parents.

February 8, 1722-3. "In running the bounds of the school lot, being No. 68, given to the school by Mr. Daniel Russell, being in second division of Charlestown, viz.: a wood lot of $45\frac{1}{2}$ acres, it was found that this lot and lot 67 fell short $10\frac{1}{2}$ acres, & we offered to settle the bounds with Mr. Joseph Underwood, we to abate 7 acres and he $3\frac{1}{2}$ acres, which he refused. But we settled bounds & drove down stakes accordingly. Thomas Jenner, Town Clerk."

Rev. Daniel Russell, son of Richard, in his will, 26 December, 1678, bequeathed to the town of Charlestown "for the free school, if it is effected in a year's time, 95 acres wood."

May 8, 1723. We may judge something of the school fund at this time from the following: Of the £60 for the schoolmaster, £20 was voted from the town treasury. "The rent of Lovell's Is. £15; rent of ye school lott £5; the interest of £300 & part of ye Lynn farm £20, to make up the remainder."

April 6, 1724. "Mr. Joseph Stimson, gramer school master resigned." This reverend gentleman was the son of Andrew Stimson, Jr., of Cambridge, where he was born February 7, 1700, and graduated from the college in the class of 1720. He became the pastor of the Second church of Malden, and died there March 28, 1752. Through his mother, Abigail Sweetser, he was a cousin to his successor, the next schoolmaster of Charlestown.

The following year, 1725, the custom is revived of paying a man "for looking after the boys on the Lord's Day." Robert Trevett is allowed twenty shillings the first quarter for such service, to begin 8 November, 1726-7, "To Robert Trevett £4 for last year looking after the boys." The same amount is appropriated the year following.

Stray items of expense are interesting: 1724, "Paid for bell to the schoolhouse £2. 10. 0. Richard Miller's bill for work at ye school, &c., &c., £1. 5. 4. John Sprague £4. 5. 0. for a weather cock & mending the school bell." June 15, 1724, Mr. Seth Sweetser was chosen school master. "Mr. John Foye, Mr. Henry Phillips, Thomas Greaves, Esq., Mr. Daniel Russell & Deac. Jonathan Kettle were appointed a committee to apply themselves to ye ministers, as the law directs, for their approbation of Mr. Seth Sweetser, jr., for a grammer school master. His salary is £75 to begin 7 July."

Viewed by the light of later years, this entry has a significance which it would be hard to estimate. For more than a generation we are to follow the history of the Charlestown school, which thus long was under the guidance of this worthy gentleman. The amount appropriated for Mr. Sweetser's salary grew year by year. But the apparent increase, it must be remembered,

was due to a gradual depreciation of the currency, which, in time, came to be estimated in terms of "old tenor" and "new tenor."

May 19, 1746, the amount voted in town meeting for Mr. Sweetser's pay reached the very considerable figure of £250. It was not without frequent petitions, however, that he met with such consideration. These, it would appear, were presented personally, as May 14, 1739, we read: "Mr. Sweetser prays for an increase in his salary, and gets £180." 1746, "Mr. Sweetser prays for more salary, and considering the depreciation of money, £250 is voted." The next three years the amount appropriated fell to £150. Under the stress which probably tried more souls than one, Mr. Sweetser's success seems to have suffered a decline. In 1748 a vote was passed instructing the selectmen to visit his school at least once a quarter. The next year they were authorized to agree with some other instructor, if Mr. Sweetser refused to accept the sum offered him, £150. His resignation went into effect March 6, 1750, after more than a quarter of a century of continual service. A brighter day, however, was in store for him. But matters of importance, in some of which Mr. Sweetser was indirectly concerned, demand that we go back again over these years.

Often these yearly appropriations were in this form: 1724, "£40 were voted for master's salary and £40 more out of the school fund; £5 of it being for fire wood." Very frequently a sum is voted for repairs; as, 1727, £5 on the town house and the schoolhouse. In 1739 £40 is voted for repairs, and 1748 the amount set aside for the purpose is £100 for the schoolhouse alone. Thus the third school building of Charlestown, which, according to our reckoning, ought to have ended its existence about this time, by a timely outlay was made to do duty for several years to come.

Considerable light is thrown upon the school fund at this time. In 1727 it was itemized as follows:—

Lovell's Island, let to William Walters (?), £17.

School lot, let to Timothy Wright, £5.

Salt marsh (on Malden side), let to Joseph Frost, £1. 10.

Money at interest, £357. 10. 0., with income of £21. 9. 0.

A school lot in first division,—amount not given.

Soheegan farm,—not valued.

Land adjoining the schoolhouse,—not valued.

In 1740 the free school income amounted to £71. 4. 0. (Frothingham.) In 1748 these funds amounted to £1,857, Sowhegum farm having been sold for £1,500, and the annual income from this is £180. 10. 0.

From the following entries it will be seen that the selectmen assumed authority over private schools: 1727, "Mr. John Stevens, student at the college, is allowed to keep a Private school in the town for writing & ciphering."

November 17, 1729. "Ordered that Samuel Burr have liberty to improve the middle chamber of the almshouse for to keep a writing school for this winter." 1749, "The selectmen approbated and allowed Mr. Matthew Cushing to keep a private school in this town, to instruct youth in reading, writing, and cyphering, and other sciences, he having been recommended as a person of sober and good conversation." (Frothingham, page 260.)

May 15, 1728, the question came up in town meeting "whether the selectmen shall agree with some person to assist Mr. Sweetser in teaching the school or shall erect another building." The committee chosen to consider the matter were Thomas Greaves, Daniel Russell, Joseph Kent, Joseph Lemmon, and Aaron Cleveland. Later they make an interesting report, in which they suggest that many unfit to attend be kept out of the school. They also think "it might do to have a reading school somewhere at the town charge." Another committee, "to regulate the school accordingly," consisted of Deacon Samuel Frothingham, Deacon Jonathan Kettle, and Joseph Lemmon. That word "somewhere" may have encouraged the petition of several of the inhabitants of the town. In answer thereto, June 17, 1728, "it was voted that the petitioners be allowed out of the Town Treasury towards keeping a school among them their proportion of what they are taxed toward the school or schools in the Town, provided it be employed to that use only for the year ensuing."

This seems to be the first record that can be construed as re-

lating to schools in the outer sections of the town. If, however, the people of the outlying districts accepted these terms and established schools of their own, there is nothing on the books, for a number of years, to show it. It may interest some to read that the selectmen for this year (1728) included Joseph Frost and Joseph Kent,—surnames that are familiar on early Somerville records.

Not until 1736 do we find anything bearing on this subject. In a warrant for a town meeting, April 26 of that year, is the following item: "To see whether the Town will vote to have a school or schools kept in the Town (above the Neck) for teaching and instructing youth in reading, writing, and cyphering." At the meeting held May 6, it was voted to raise £25 for said school, which sum was to be put into the hands of a committee "which are inhabitants without the Neck, to provide a schoolmaster to instruct their children. This committee was empowered to regulate said school as they shall think most convenient for the inhabitants."

Thus was instituted an educational system for the outlying districts which was to continue without material change for more than half a century. These papers, henceforth, will endeavor to emphasize everything on the records relating to this subject, as they give us our first knowledge of the school in that part of the town which afterwards was set off to Medford, to Arlington, or became the town of Somerville. Unfortunately, our information for a time will have to be confined to the annual appropriations and the local committees appointed at the May town meeting. If access could be had to any existing private papers of the Tufts family, of the Rands, Kents, Frosts, Russells, etc., the few men of that period who administered the affairs of our section of Charlestown, no doubt much interesting material might be found. By consulting Wyman's valuable work and the Brooks-Usher history of Medford, we can determine readily to which section those on the various committees were devoted. Four or five districts must have been represented, which we may designate as the Milk Row, the Alewife Brook, the upper, or Gardner Row, and the one or more at Medford side.

COMMITTEES APPOINTED FOR THE SCHOOL OUTSIDE THE NECK, TOGETHER WITH THE ANNUAL APPROPRIATIONS.

May 5, 1736, William Symmes, Joseph Frost, William Rand, £25.

May, 1837, William Symmes, Joseph Frost, Joseph Kent, £30.

May 15, 1738, William Rand, Samuel Hutchinson, Henry Gardner, £30.

May 14, 1739, Joseph Kent, Samuel Hutchinson, Henry Gardner, £30.

May 13, 1740, Captain Caleb Brooks, James Peirce, James Tufts, £40.

May 11, 1741, Joseph Kent, Captain Caleb Brooks, James Tufts, £40.

May 10, 1742, and May 10, 1743, the same committee.

May 8, 1744, Captain Caleb Brooks, Joseph Kent, Nathaniel Francis, £50.

May 13, 1745, the same committee.

May 19, 1746, Joseph Kent, Nathaniel Francis, John Bradshaw, £50.

May 11, 1747, Peter Tufts, Philip Cartwrite (Carteret), John Bradshaw, £60.

May 6, 1748, Nathaniel Lamson, Joseph Kent, John Bradshaw, Nathaniel Francis, and Henry Gardner, £80.

May 15, 1749, the same committee, with Mr. Kent, chairman, £100.

May, 1750, Nathaniel Lamson, Nathaniel Francis, Henry Gardner, John Skinner, Samuel Rand, £250, or £33. 6. 8. lawful money.

May 20, 1751, Peter Tufts, Henry Gardner, Benjamin Parker, Seth Reed, Joseph Phipps, £200. O. T.

May 12, 1752, Samuel Bowman, Henry Gardner, Seth Reed, Benjamin Parker, Joseph Phipps, Samuel Kent, £200, or £26. 13. 4. lawful money.

May 14, 1753, Benjamin Parker, Seth Reed, Samuel Kent, Joseph Phipps, £240.

We close the list at this point, as by the next May the town of Medford had taken on a more definite form, and Charlestown,

in consequence, suffered a considerable diminution in territory.

This indefinitely designated locality "beyond the Neck," or "outside the peninsula," consisting, we see, of distinct communities separated by wide stretches of unsettled or sparsely settled territory, to all appearances, after the vote of May, 1736, amicably portioned out the sums we have quoted above. That each district had a school of its own is not certain, but we are inclined to think it did have one. As yet, there is no mention of school-houses, and, although they may have been built by private subscription—little cheap affairs—it is more probable that, for some years, at least, the benefits of education were dispensed in private rooms hired for that purpose. From a study of conditions in some of the neighboring towns, we learn that it was customary, at this period of our history, for the poorer and more sparsely-settled districts to have an itinerant schoolmaster, who devoted himself for a stated period—say a month or six weeks—to one section of the town, and so on until all had been similarly served. The invariable wording of the vote during these first years is for the "school," not "schools," outside the Neck, and for the schoolmaster,—singular, not plural. Now it is very certain this school was not held in some central locality, accessible to all. Neither is it supposable that the young people of Milk Row, for instance, traveled to Medford, or those from Medford to Milk Row. The only way left was for the schoolmaster to circulate about, to time his peregrinations so as to suit the convenience of his constituents. Still another way has been suggested, namely, that, after receiving its just share of the appropriation, each section continued its school for the rest of the year at its own expense.

Concerning the teachers of these outlying districts, the records are provokingly silent. We are indebted to them for one name, however, that of Cotton Tufts, who may have taught on Somerville soil, but it is more probable that his labors were confined to the Medford precinct. This is the record:—

"June 12, 1751, voted to pay Mr. Cotton Tufts, 76£, old tenor, in full, as schoolmaster and employed by Mr. John Skinner, deceased, one of the committee to regulate the school without the neck."

This was, doubtless, the son of Dr. Simon Tufts, the first physician of Medford. Cotton Tufts was born May 3, 1734, and graduated from Harvard College in 1749. Our record shows that he was master of the ferule at the early age of seventeen. Later he married a Miss Smith, sister, it is said, of President John Adams' wife, and resided in Weymouth. He was president of the Massachusetts Medical Association about 1776. His funeral sermon, preached by the Rev. Jacob Norton, is still extant.

Wyman, against the name of Joseph Russell (Walter³, Joseph², William¹), born August 27, 1702, says that he kept school about 1724. As the place is not designated, we may not be justified in including him among Charlestown teachers. He may have taught in Menotomy (West Cambridge), where the family lived. But the fact that the historian thus alludes to him would seem to imply that he taught on this side of the line. If not a pedagogue of Charlestown himself, he became the progenitor of a line of teachers through his grandson, Philemon R. Russell, of whom we hope to speak later on.

The little cemetery on Phipps street has preserved from oblivion one other name, that of Mistress Rebeckah Anderson, the only one of the worthy "dames" of that early period whose name has come down to us. The headstone reads:—

Here Lyes Buried
ye Body of Mrs.
Rebeckah Anderson
(Late School-Mistress in
this Town) who Died
March 4th, Anno Dom'
1743-4 in the 49th
Year of Her Age.

Close by is the grave of her sister, Mrs. Elizabeth Phillips, the famous midwife, who held her commission from the bishop of London. The name of Rebeckah Anderson, who led the van, and that, too, so far in advance of the great army of female teachers, who since her time have battled faithfully for the cause, ought to be treasured by her sisters of to-day. We give this sentiment: As their number never faileth, so may her grave, hereafter, never lack a flower or a sprig of green for memory's sake.

We cannot close this chapter without referring to the name of Isaac Royal, Esq., whose generous benefactions, especially to the outlying schools of Charlestown, entitle him to a place in this history. He was one of the most influential and distinguished citizens of the town, and, as is well known, dwelt in that section which afterwards became Medford. Her father, Isaac Royal, Sr., in 1732, purchased of the heirs of Governor Usher an estate of about 500 acres, the consideration being £10,350. The house which is still standing, was enlarged and beautified, and became one of the most pretentious and elegant mansions of the day within the suburbs of Boston. Here the father died, 7 June, 1739, and his widow, "dame Elizabeth," also, 21 April, 1747. Isaac Royall, Jr., born in the West Indies about 1719, thus became the heir of a large and productive estate at the early age of twenty. It is written of him that he delighted to display his riches, and that he had political aspirations, which were partly gratified. But, whatever his motive, he offers an example of generous and interested citizenship which did not find an equal in his day and generation. Personal gleanings from the records give us the following facts:—

In town meeting, May 10, 1743, the thanks of the town were voted to Isaac Royall for his gift of £100, to be used as the town sees fit. The same year he paid out on the highway £45. 13. 0., which sum was offered as a gift to the town, and accepted with thanks.

May 8, 1744, Isaac Royall offered his last year's salary as Representative, with the understanding that the town was to expend it upon the poor.

May 13, 1745, he offered £30 for the poor within the Neck, and £80 for the use of the school without the Neck. Frothingham's History, under date of this year, wrongly states that the gift of £80 was to the school at the Neck. There was no school at the Neck at this time.

May 19, 1746, Mr. Royall offers £30 for the use of the school without the Neck, in addition to what the town raises for that purpose, and £30 for supporting highways between Winter Hill and Mistick bridge. Mr. Royall was one of the selectmen for

1746, and for several years thereafter. May 11, 1747, he returns to the town his pay as Representative the year before. May 16, 1748, of his salary (£120 as Representative), he gives £40 to the poor within the Neck and £80 for the use of the school without the Neck. The next May meeting he gives his year's salary for whatever use the town desires. Again, he donates one-half of his last year's salary to the school without the Neck, and one-half to the school within the Neck. In 1752 Mr. Royal is again elected to the General Court, "but cannot serve the Town as he is made one of the Governor's Councillors," a position which he held for twenty-three years in succession, or until 1774. For his ability he was awarded other high offices, as that of Justice of the Peace and Quorum. He was also a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, and in 1761 became a brigadier-general, "the first of that title among Americans." After 1753, when he became a citizen of Medford, his name, of course, drops from our records. It is not without a feeling of sadness that we contemplate the latter part of his career, which was spent in exile, far from the land he had served long and honorably, and which, so far as we can learn, he ever regarded with affection. He died October, 1781, in England.

ALBERT CLIFFORD TUFTS.

By Edward C. Booth.

ALBERT CLIFFORD TUFTS died March 19, 1904, at his residence, 144 Summer street, Somerville. He had been ill with grippe for three weeks, and was convalescing, when cerebral symptoms supervened, which rapidly brought on a fatal termination. Mr. Tufts was the youngest child of Nathan, Jr., and Mary Jane (Fitz) Tufts, and was born in the house in which he died, September 11, 1864. His paternal grandfather was Nathan Tufts, of Somerville, for whom the Nathan Tufts park, surrounding the old mill and Powder House, was named. His maternal grandfather was Abel Fitz, a prominent merchant of Charlestown, and early resident of Somerville. Mr. Tufts was educated in the public schools of his native

city. On his graduation from the high school in 1883, he entered the counting room of his father and brother, grain merchants on Warren bridge, Charlestown. He became a partner on the death of his father in 1887, and was active in the business till his last illness.

Mr. Tufts married, April 19, 1893, Mary Belle, the daughter of William Wallace and Anna (Moses) Cotton, of Portsmouth, N. H., who, with a son, Nathan, a boy of six years, survives him. An elder child, Elizabeth, lived to the age of eighteen months.

Though somewhat retiring in general company, Mr. Tufts was fond of the society of his kindred and friends, and was a frequent and generous host. He was keenly alive to the amusements and pleasantries of life, and yet he seemed to preserve the simple and sober ways of a Puritan ancestry. He impressed all who met him in his many walks of life as a sincere, just, and thoroughly trustworthy man. He was the soul of honor. The business ethics inherited from his fathers were not decadent in him. He dealt with all in a straightforward and honorable way, and heartily despised the trickeries and petty meannesses of the world; and yet we fail to recall that he ever spoke ill of any one. As a friend he was helpful, steadfast, and true. He was a constant, unobtrusive, though discriminating, giver to worthy causes. Blessed in his domestic relations, he was singularly happy in his family and home. He was a tender husband and parent, a kind and thoughtful brother, and a loyal kinsman.

His sterling business qualities and the unusual correctness of his life naturally brought him to positions of trust and responsibility. He was a member of the Boston Chamber of Commerce, and served on its important committees and as one of its board of trustees. He was a director in the Bunker Hill National Bank; a member of the New England Historic-Genealogical and the Somerville Historical Societies, and of the Merchants' Club of Boston; a director in the Central Club Association of Somerville; and a member of the Standing Committee and an earnest supporter of the First Congregational (Unitarian) Church of Somerville, with which he had always been affiliated. At these various directing boards he was a regular attendant, a conscientious worker, a wise counsellor, and a safe guardian.

NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NO. 7. WINTER HILL.

By Harriet A. Adams.

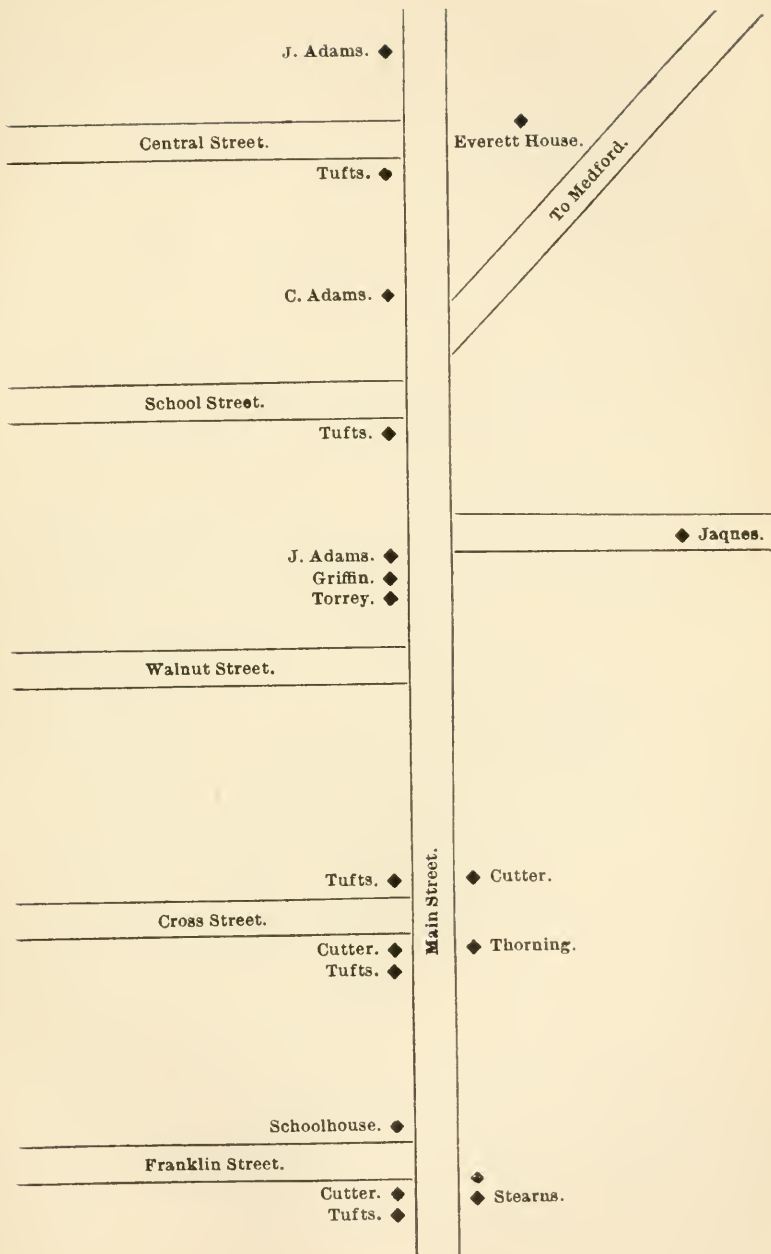
COMMENCING with Joseph Adams, farmer, on the right-hand side, facing down at the top of Winter Hill, was the old Adams house, sometimes called the Magoun house. In 1840, and for many years afterwards, the nearest house was that of Abby and Edmund Tufts, on the lower corner of Broadway and Central street. Mr. Tufts was a printer, and got out the first directory of Somerville.

The next house, that of Chester Adams, was afterward moved to the foot of Winter Hill. Mr. Adams drove down to the bank in Charlestown every morning. There was no regular public conveyance to the city, but a stage ran from Charlestown to Medford, sometimes on Medford Turnpike, and sometimes on Main street (Broadway), which would occasionally pick up a passenger on the highway. The next house was on the lower corner of Main and School streets, owned and occupied by Asa Tufts, a farmer, whose family consisted of a wife and four children.

Later Mr. Ring built a house below this of Mr. Tufts, and there was also a double house, occupied by the families of Luther and Nathaniel Mitchell, brickmakers. At this time there were brickyards on Main street, and the dangerous clay-pits remained long after the business was abandoned. The next house was the Adams house, built for the son of Joseph Adams, of Winter Hill. This house is more than a hundred years old, and to it the Lady Superior and thirty scholars fled for protection on the night of the burning of the Ursuline Convent, August, 1834.

On the same side of the street and next below lived the family of Mr. Griffin. He was a brickmaker, and in the next house was a family by the name of Torrey. From Main street the boats running on the old Middlesex canal could be plainly seen passing to and fro in summer, while in winter the canal was the resort of skaters from quite a distance.

What stagnation in business must have ensued when navigation was suspended on that great highway of commerce! There were no houses in 1840 between Walnut and Cross streets.



These crossways were not then called streets, but were styled lanes. Thus Cross street was known as Three Pole Lane. There was a very old house with a sloping roof on the corner of Main street and Three Pole Lane, occupied by a family of Tufts, and afterwards by a Fillebrown family. On the opposite corner lived Mrs. Cutter, the mother of Edward and Fitch Cutter, also a widow by the name of Tufts. There was no other house on that side of Main street until you came to the little district schoolhouse on the corner of what is now Franklin street. There was a "pound" close by, where the school children had famous times with their games. Fitch Cutter, teamster, lived in the next house, and between his house and the schoolhouse there was but a cart track, where now is Franklin street. There were no sidewalks on Main street, and the mud at some seasons was deep indeed. Vehicles would drive close to the grass, and the walking was fearful. A great amount of teaming was done on this road, and the ruts were so deep that, once in them, it was dangerous to try to get out, and many a wrecked wagon strewed the highway.

The next house below Fitch Cutter's was that of Daniel Tufts, occupied afterwards by a family named Cutter. On the left-hand side coming from the top of Winter Hill was the Everett house, where Governor Everett resided for a while; this house is on the corner of Main street and the road to Medford. At the foot of the hill a rangeway led out from Main street to the left, across the Medford Turnpike, to the house of Colonel Jaques, who carried on a stock farm.

Later than the time of which we are writing a house was built halfway down the hill, and occupied by a family named Houghton.

The next house was opposite Three Pole Lane, owned and occupied by Edward Cutter, teamster. In a small house next to him lived Mr. Thorning, with two sons and a daughter. Mrs. Torrey lived there afterwards. There were no more houses before you came to the entrance of the convent grounds; beyond that there was a house occupied by different families. Next to this was the residence of William Stearns and family. This very old house is still standing.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1904

Vol. III

No. 2

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
JOHN WINTHROP	<i>Charles D. Elliot</i> 25
JOHN S. EDGERLY	<i>Helen M. Despeaux</i> 36
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHIN THE PENIN- SULA (Continued.)	<i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> 43

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



✠ Tomb of Gov. Winthrop family

Groton Church

copy by G.F. Loring

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. III.

JULY, 1904

No. 2

JOHN WINTHROP

By Charles D. Elliot

The parish of Groton in the county of Suffolk, Eng., lies midway between the town of Sudbury on the river Stower and the town of Hadleigh on the river Bret, Sudbury being about five miles west, and Hadleigh five miles east of Groton, adjoining which to the west is Edwardston, the birthplace of the subject of this paper, Governor John Winthrop. He was born January 12, 1587 (O. S.), and was the son of Adam and Anne Winthrop, of Groton manor, which was the ancestral home of the Winthrops, this estate having descended to this Adam from his grandfather, Adam Winthrop, to whom it had been granted by patent in 1544 by Henry VIII.; the estate previously belonged to the monastery of Bury St. Edmonds.

The following record of Governor Winthrop's birth was made by his father in these words: "John, the only sonne of Adam Winthrop and Anne his wife, was borne in Edwardston on Thursday, about 5 of the clock in the morning the 12 daie of January anno 1587 in the 30 yere of the reigne of Qu. Eliza." Other entries in his diary concerning his son John relate concisely certain important events in the life of the future governor, viz., his entrance to college, his courtship, first marriage and honeymoon. These entries are as follows, viz.:—

"1602. The 2d of December I rode to Cambridge. The VIIIth John my soonne was admitted into Trinitie College."

"1604. The XXIIId of Aprill my sonne returned from Cambridge."

"1604. The Vth of Novembre my soonne did ryde into Essex wth Willm Forth to Great Stambridge."

"1605. . . . March : . . the XXVIIIth day my soonne was sollemly contracted to Mary Foorth by Mr. Culverwell, Minister of Great Stambridge."

"The 16th of Aprill (1605) he was married at Great Stambridge."

"The VIIIth of May (1605) my soonne & his wife came to Groton from London, and the IXth I made a marriage feast," etc.

The above records show that Governor Winthrop was but seventeen years old when married. He immediately came under Mr. Culverwell's ministry, to which, in a confession of his youthful sinfulness made in after life, he ascribes his conversion to Christianity; of which he says, "The ministry of the word came home to my heart with power. . . . I could no longer dally with religion. . . . I had an unsatiable thirst after the word of God; and could not miss a good sermon, especially of such as did search deep into the conscience."

In June, 1615, his wife Mary died, and on December 6, 1615, he married his second wife, Thomasine Clopton, who lived but a year after her marriage. Winthrop speaks of her as a "woman wise, modest, loving & patient of injuries" . . . "& truly religious."

In 1618 he married his third wife, Margaret Tindall. Two letters from him to this lady before their marriage, are models of commingled piety and affection for his future wife, and are very quaint and curious. His third wife died in June, 1647, and in December he married his fourth wife, widow Martha Coitmore, who survived him, and married a third husband, John Coggan.

The letters, still extant, between Governor Winthrop and his wives are conclusive evidence that in the lottery of matrimony he drew charming prizes, as did they.

Winthrop was a justice at eighteen years of age, and lawyer in London as early as 1622, and probably followed some branch of the legal profession up to the time of his appointment as governor—holding court as lord of the manor, and being for some time one of the "Atturnies in the Courte of Wards and Lyvereyes" at the inner temple, etc. He seems to have had clients among the nobility, and to have performed professional service in connection with parliamentary proceedings. One of the bills drawn up by him is entitled "An Act for the preventing of drunkenness and of the great waste of corn," and has the following preamble:

"Forasmuch as it is evident that the excessive strength of beer and ale in Inns & Alehouses is a principal occasion of the waste of the grain of this kingdom and the only fuel of drunkenness & disorder," etc., and enacts that a strength of not over two bushels of malt in a hogshead of beer shall be hereafter used under a penalty of ten pounds for each offense, etc.

The commencement of the Massachusetts Bay Company, whose charter of 1628 Winthrop brought with him, is thus told by Deputy-Governor Thomas Dudley, in a letter to the Countess of Lincoln. He says: "Touching the Plantation which we here have begun, it fell out thus: About the year 1627, some friends being together in Lincolnshire, fell into discourse about New England and the planting of the Gospel there, and after some deliberation, we imparted our reasons, by letters and messages, to some in London and the west country, where it was likewise deliberately thought upon, and at length negotiation so ripened that in the year 1628 we procured a patent from his Majesty for our planting between the Mattachusetts Bay and Charles river on the south, and the river Merrimack on the north." . . .

"Mr. Winthrop, of Suffolk (who was well known in his own country and well approved here for his piety, liberality, wisdom and gravity) coming in to us, we came to such resolution, that in April, 1630, we set sail from Old England." The company to whom this patent from King James of which Dudley speaks was granted was entitled "The Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England." Its records have been preserved and published, and are very full in detail, and intensely interesting with reference to the founding of Eastern Massachusetts, and the part taken therein by John Winthrop. The company held its "General Courts" from time to time in London; the one in which we are most interested is concerning the transfer of its government to Massachusetts and appointment of Winthrop as governor. It was on July 28, 1629, and reads: "And lastly, Mr. Governor (Cradock) read certain propositions conceived by himself, viz.: That for the advancement of the Plantation, the inducing and encouraging persons of worth and quality to transplant themselves and families thither, and for other weighty reasons, to

transfer the government of the Plantation to those that shall inhabit there, and not to continue the same in subordination to the company here" (in London). Those present were desired to privately consider this matter, and bring reasons in writing pro and con at the next General Court, and meanwhile to preserve secrecy, "that the same be not divulged," probably fearing that King James' government might defeat their purpose. On August 26, 1629, or within a month after this meeting, an agreement was drawn up between John Winthrop, Thomas Dudley, Richard Salstonstall, William Vassall, Increase Nowell, and others, all now good old New England names, "to embark by the 1st of March next" . . . "to pass the seas (under God's protecton), to inhabit and continue in New England; provided, always, that before the last of September next, the whole government, together with the Patent for the said Plantation, be first, by an order of Court, legally transferred and established to remain with us and others which shall inhabit said Plantation," etc. On August 29, 1629, another general court of the company was held, and the matter of transferring the government and charter to New England again discussed, and on the next day the question came up for final decision. The records say that, "after a long debate, Mr. Deputy (Gov'r) put it to the question as followeth: As many of you as desire to have the patent and the government of the Plantation to be transferred to New England," etc., "hold up your hands," etc., "when, by erection of hands, it appeared by the general consent of the company that the government and patent should be settled in New England." At several other meetings the details of this transfer of government were discussed, and on October 20, 1629, the court met to elect the new governor, "and having received extraordinary great commendations of Mr. John Wyntthrop, both for his integrity, and sufficiency, did put in nomination for that place the said John Winthrop," and he was by a general vote, "by erection of hands, chosen to be Governor for the ensuing year."

Winthrop's voyage to America is described with minuteness day by day in his diary. It begins:—

"Anno Domini, 1630, March 29, Monday (Easter Monday).

Riding at the Cowes, near the Isle of Wight, in the *Arbella*," a ship of 350 tons, "whereof Capt. Peter Milborne was Master, being manned with 52 seamen and 28 pieces of ordnance," etc. At the present day this seems a pretty large armament for such a little canoe of a ship; however, disregarding the proverb of a century or more later, that "Greater ships may venture more, but little boats should keep near shore," they sailed from Old England, and after a long voyage full of incident and peril, from foe and from sea, arrived safely at Salem on June 12, 1630. Speaking of his arrival, Winthrop says: "About 4 in the morning we were near our port. We shot off two pieces of ordnance, and sent our skiff to Mr. Peirce his ship, which lay in the harbor." . . . "Mr. Peirce came aboard us, and returned to fetch Mr. Endecott" . . . "and with him Mr. Skelton and Capt. Levett." . . . "We . . . returned with them to Nahumkeck (Salem), where we supped with good venison pasty and good beer, and at night we returned to our ship." On Thursday, June 17, he writes: "We went to Mattachusetts, to find out a place for our sitting down. We went up Mistick River about six miles." On July 2 he records: "My son Henry Winthrop was drowned at Salem." This was his first great sorrow since arriving.

Under Thursday, July 8, his diary says: "We kept a day of thanksgiving in all the plantations," and under August, but no date, he says, "Monday we kept at Court." This was the first general court held in Massachusetts; it was presided over by Governor Winthrop; it was on August 23, 1630, at Charlestown. Among his first day's state legislation was the order "that Carpenters, joiners, bricklayers, sawyers, and thatchers take no more than 2s. a day, under pain of 10s." fine. Under date of October 23, 1630, speaking of himself in the third person, Winthrop records:—

"The Governor, upon consideration of the inconveniences which had grown in England by drinking one to another, restrained it at his own table, and wished others to do the like, so as it grew, by little and little, to disuse."

Winthrop seems by this to have been the first practical temperance reformer in these parts.

Cotton Mather relates that, "In the year 1632, the governor, with his pastor, Mr. Wilson, and some other gentlemen, to settle a good understanding between the two Colonies, traveled as far as Plymouth, more than forty miles through a howling wilderness"; . . . "the difficulty of the walk was abundantly compensated by the honorable reception" . . . "which they found from the rulers of Plymouth; and by the good correspondence thus established between the colonies, who were like the floating bottles wearing this motto: 'If we come into collision, we break.'"

The harmony established at this time between the two colonies, whose interests in many ways were perhaps not identical, grew some years later into that confederation known as the United Colonies of New England, which was a potent factor in the defense and settlement of the country.

The governor resided first in Charlestown, in the so-called "Great House," where now is City square, in which building, also, was held the general court of the colony. Later, with others he moved to Boston. He settled on the easterly side of what is now Washington street, between Spring lane and Milk street, which place he called "the Green," where he built his house, at the corner of Spring lane, the frame of this house being brought over from Charlestown; it was destroyed by the British in 1775. His front yard is now occupied by the Old South church. This transfer to Boston was probably hastened by lack of good water in Charlestown. Blackstone, the lone settler of Boston, as the record says, "came and acquainted the Governor of an excellent Spring there; withal inviting him and soliciting him thither."

This spring was probably on the south side of Spring lane, not far from Devonshire street, and from which the lane was named.

On September 6, 1631, Winthrop was granted 600 acres of land on the south side of Mystic river, which he named "Ten Hills."

In 1632 he was granted "Conant's Island," in Boston harbor, and changed its name to Governor's Garden, he planting orchards, fruit, and vines there. It is now Governor's Island, the site of Fort Winthrop.

In November, 1632, he received a further grant of fifty acres of land near Wannottomies river, which is now Alewife brook, and in 1634 he was with Craddock granted the fish weir on the Mystic, at Medford, and again another grant of 1,000 acres or more on Concord river.

Winthrop seems to have temporarily resided in Cambridge in 1632. He probably resided at Ten Hills summers, and at Boston winters, maintaining an establishment at Ten Hills the year round.

The original Ten Hills farm, as granted by the general court to Winthrop in 1631, comprised all the land south of Mystic river, from Broadway park to Medford centre, the southerly boundary of the farm being Broadway as far as the Powder House, and then by a line now obliterated to Medford centre.

Ten Hills might with some reason be called a Gubernatorial Demense, being with occasional interruptions owned in families of governors or their associates, from its first grant, to the present time. Its first owner was Governor Winthrop, of Massachusetts; then his son, John Winthrop, Jr., governor of Connecticut; then Charles Lidgett, an associate of Governor Andros; then the wife of Lieutenant-Governor Usher; then Robert Temple, son of the governor of Nova Scotia; then Robert Temple, Jr., grandson of the governor of Nova Scotia, and whose wife was daughter of Governor Shirley; then by Isaac Royal, a governor's councilor; then by Thomas Russell, another governor's councilor; and recently by Governor Oliver Ames; and now by Governor Ames' heirs. Some extracts from Governor Winthrop's diary give us a picture of his life here at Ten Hills and elsewhere at this time. He says, under date of October 11, 1631: "The governor, being at his farmhouse at Mistick, walked out after supper, and took a piece in his hand, supposing he might see a wolf (for they came daily about the house, and killed swine and calves); and being about half a mile off, it grew suddenly dark, so as, in coming home, he mistook his path, and went till he came to a little house of Sagamore John, which stood empty. There he stayed, and having a piece of match in his pocket (for he always carried about him match and a compass,

and in summer time snake weed), he made a good fire near the house, and lay down upon some old mats, which he found there, and so spent the night, sometimes walking by the fire, sometimes singing psalms, and sometimes getting wood, but could not sleep. It was (through God's mercy) a warm night; but a little before day it began to rain, and having no cloak, he made shift by a long pole to climb up into the house." . . . "In the morning he returned safe home, his servants having been much perplexed for him, and having walked about, and shot off pieces, and hallooed in the night, but he heard them not."

"October 30. The Governor, having erected a building of stone at Mistick, there came so violent a storm of rain, for twenty-four hours, from the N. E. and S. E. as (it being not finished, and laid with clay for want of lime) two sides of it were washed down to the ground; and much harm was done to other houses by that storm."

"November 2. The ship Lyon, William Peirce, master, arrived at Natascot. There came in her, the Governour's wife, his eldest son and his wife, and others of his children, and Mr. Eliot, a minister, and other families, being in all about sixty persons, who all arrived in good health, having been ten weeks at sea, and lost none of their company but two children, whereof one was the Governour's daughter Ann, about one year and half old, who died about a week after they came to sea."

"November 4. The Governour, his wife and children went on shore, with Mr. Peirce, in his ship's boat. The ship gave them six or seven pieces. At their landing, the captains, with their companies in arms, entertained them with a guard, and divers volleys of shot, and three drakes; and divers of the assistants and most of the people of the near plantations came to welcome them, and brought and sent for divers days, great store of provisions, as fat hogs, kids, venison, poultry, geese, partridges, etc., so as the like joy and manifestation of love had never been seen in New England. It was a great marvel, that so much people and such store of provisions could be gathered together at so few hours' warning."

"11. We kept a day of thanksgiving at Boston."

The first ship built in Massachusetts was launched from this Ten Hills farm upon the Mystic in 1631, by Governor Winthrop, July 4—an historic day 145 years later, when a new nation was also launched. Winthrop called this boat “the Blessing of the Bay.” A few years since, old timbers were found beneath the flats, which are supposed to have been the ways over which this vessel was launched.

This ship was the first war vessel of the colony, doing valiant service against pirates in after years.

Winthrop was succeeded by Thomas Dudley as governor in 1634, but was made deputy-governor in 1636, under Sir Henry Vane, and governor again in 1637, holding until 1640; again re-elected in 1643, and yet again in 1646, retaining the office until his death in 1649.

He ruled with great discretion and firmness, with a clear judgment, and commendable fairness in the settlement of the various troublesome matters which came before him, among which were religious controversies, as well as civil dissensions. One of these was the misunderstanding between him and Deputy-Governor Dudley in many of the affairs of the colony. But these public troubles were not the only ones that Winthrop suffered; added to the death of his son Henry and another child, came that of his wife Margaret, and, to make his burdens more grievous, his confidential agent so managed his estates that financial ruin seemed inevitable.

This man, whose name was Luxford, in his letters to Winthrop, constantly reassured the governor of his faithfulness, and disclaimed the speculations with which rumor charged him, but was finally brought to trial, convicted of fraud, and also bigamy, and was imprisoned and his ears cut off.

The unfaithfulness of Luxford caused Winthrop to revoke certain testaments in his will, in which document he says that, through his servants, his debts are £2,600, whereof he did not know of more than £300.

In 1645 one of his worst misfortunes in public life befell him; this was his accusation and trial for “an invasion of the rights of

the people" in quelling mutinous practices in Hingham, from which charge, however, he was finally acquitted.

His address to the general court after acquittal is certainly worthy of repetition here.

He said: "I shall not now speak anything about the past proceedings of court, or the persons therein concerned." . . . "I am well satisfied that I was publickly accused, and that I am now publickly acquitted." . . . "But give me leave, before you go, to say something that may rectifie the opinions of many people." . . . "The questions that have troubled the country have been about the authority of the magistracy, and the liberty of the people. It is you who have called us unto this office; but being thus called, we have our authority from God," . . . "and the contempt of it has been vindicated by God with terrible examples of his vengeance. I entreat you to consider, that when you chuse magistrates, you take them from among yourselves, 'men subject unto like passions with yourselves.' If you see our infirmities, reflect on your own, and you will not be so severe censurers of ours. We count him a good servant who breaks not his covenant; the covenant between us and you is the oath you have taken of us, which is to this purpose, 'that we shall govern you, and judge your causes, according to God's laws, and our own, according to our best skill.' As for our skill, you must run the hazard of it; and if there be an error, not in the will, but only in the skill, it becomes you to bear it. Nor would I have you mistake in the point of your own liberty.

"There is a liberty of corrupt nature, which is affected by men. . . . We are all the worse for it. 'Tis the grand enemy of truth and peace, and all the ordinances of God are bent against it. But there is a civil, a moral, a federal liberty, which is the proper end and object of authority; it is a liberty for that only which is just and good; for this liberty you are to stand with the hazard of your very lives; and whatsoever crosses it is not authority, but a distemper thereof."

There were many disturbing and unrighteous elements here in those days, and the old proverb was often exemplified, that "where the Lord hath a church the devil hath a chapel."

Cotton Mather, in speaking of Winthrop, said: "Many were the afflictions of this righteous man! He lost much of his estate in a ship, and in a house, quickly after his coming to New England, besides the prodigious expense of it in the difficulties of his first coming hither. Afterwards his assiduous application unto the publick affairs (wherein he no longer belonged to himself, after the Republic had once made him her Chief Magistrate) made him so much to neglect his own private interests that an unjust steward ran him £2,500 in debt before he was aware; for the payment whereof he was forced, many years before his decease, to sell the most of what he had left unto him in the country.

"Albeit, by the observable blessings of God upon the posterity of this liberal man, his children, all of them, came to fair estates, and lived in good fashion and credit."

Of the ancestors of John Winthrop I have already made passing mention; they were men prominent in England and in high esteem, holding eminent positions, and being lords of the manor of Groton, as was also John.

Of his descendants we can speak with equal terms of praise. His son John, Jr., and grandson Fitz John were both governors of Connecticut. His son Stephen was a major-general and member of parliament for Scotland; his grandson Waitstill was chief justice of Massachusetts. In more recent years the descendants of the governor, the chief of whom are the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop and the lamented Major Theodore Winthrop, who was killed in the battle of Big Bethel, have nobly maintained the character of this remarkable family.

Many mementoes of the Winthrops are, or were until recently, extant, but that which recalls to us the early history and home of the family, the ancient church at Groton in England is, I think, the most interesting. In its graveyard is the tomb of the early Winthrops, with its inscription:—

"Heaven the Country, Christ the way. Here lies the body of Adam Winthrop, Esq., son of Adam Winthrop, Esq., who were patrons of this church and Lords of the Manor of Groton."

John Winthrop bore an unblemished character. His virtues were written in every line of his life; he was cultured, yet un-

assuming; liberal, yet conservative; gentle, yet firm; politic, yet conscientious; modest, yet courageous; a chivalric gentleman and noble Christian, and his memory deserves to be perpetuated on shaft of adamant, in letters of purest gold.

In closing, I wish to say, that if the day ever comes when the present desolate waste which was once Governor Winthrop's manor on the Mystic is again improved and restored, I trust that some lasting monument, worthy of the man, will be placed there, whose chiseled inscription shall relate to the young and old of the coming centuries, the story of his noble and unselfish character, his Christian virtues, and his distinguished services as the founder of our state.

JOHN S. EDGERLY AND HIS HOME ON WINTER HILL

By *Helen M. Despeaux*

I have seen published many memories of Somerville events so far from correct, I am the more willing to tell what I know to be true of my father's life. When the semi-centennial of Somerville was celebrated in 1892, it seemed to me that the mention of the first settlers of the place was far less than that of those who followed in the city's ranks. Having occasion to write to the late John S. Hayes about that time, I mentioned the fact to him, and in his reply he said: "It has fallen to me to write a 'History of Somerville,' and it is my full intention to put conspicuously to the front the men who made the city possible by their great interest in the town." Mr. Hayes was taken ill, and unable to carry out the task assigned him. We can forgive him our part in it, as he gave in the twenty-fifth Annual Report of the Somerville Public Library such a laudatory notice of my brother Edward Everett Edgerly, whose portrait hangs in the library building to-day. He said in closing: "May his memory in connection with this library prove an incentive to the youth of to-day, not only to live to accomplish our ideal of personal work, but also to help others to think high thoughts, to do brave deeds, and live a noble and blameless life." Unfortunately, the youth seldom see

these Reports. Except for mention here and there of people and landmarks, I think no history of Somerville has ever been written, and I should not presume to write one; but I am asked to give you this evening a sketch of John S. Edgerly and his home on Winter Hill.

Mr. Edgerly was born in Meredith, N. H., not far from Winnepesaukee, November 30, 1804. He was the son of Samuel Edgerly, who married Betsey Smith, January, 1794. There were twelve children in the family. In the earlier generation, his first ancestor who came to this country was Thomas Edgerly, before 1665. He landed probably at Portsmouth, and was received as an inhabitant of Oyster Bay, township of Dover. In the generation that followed there was much trouble with the Indians, and in some cases they were massacred by them. Like many another young man before and since, when he had reached the "years of discretion" he was ambitious to see what the larger life of the city of Boston had for him; and I judge he left home for that purpose when about twenty years of age. I presume he had the struggle most people do to find the right thing to do. But he became a stonemason (physical labor was not considered as menial then as now). I have no doubt his love for stone was acquired by this labor, for we always had stone steps and stone flagging to our front door before others did, and I believe he advocated strongly stone steps around the Unitarian church building that has since been demolished.

After leaving this business, he went to work in the grain business for a Mr. Vinal. We have seen in some reports that it was Deacon Robert Vinal, and that he was a member of the household; but on applying to Mr. Quincy Vinal, son of Deacon Robert, he said he thought it was without foundation. But he does remember hearing his father say that when Mr. Edgerly first came to Boston, he was the smartest young man he ever knew of, desirous to learn, very energetic, and busy every moment. Be that as it may, I know he was well acquainted with Deacon and Mrs. Vinal, and they were the only ones from Charlestown present at the marriage of Mr. Edgerly at a little home in Boston over seventy years ago, from which house he moved, with his

wife and two children, in 1836, to the house that he had bought on Winter Hill.*

The house is between the road to what is now Arlington and that to Medford. It was built in 1805 by Colonel John Sweetser, and was called "The Odin House," and as I have heard that it was formerly a "tavern," I presume it was at that time. At some time later it was occupied by Dr. Samuel Parkman. From 1826 to 1830 it was occupied by the Hon. Edward Everett, and in 1836 Mr. Edgerly took possession. He always liked things on a large scale, which doubtless accounts for his buying so large a place; and after a few years the house had to be enlarged. Mr. Edgerly, though what might be termed a self-made man, was, nevertheless, of importance to the town, and in 1842 he succeeded, with several others who were indignant at the treatment from Charlestown (of which it seemed to be the *flag end*), in obtaining permission from the Legislature to become a separate town, the limits of which were as they are to-day. There was great rejoicing when the decision was announced, and 100 guns were fired from Prospect Hill. The first five selectmen of the new town were Nathan Tufts, Sr. (chairman), John S. Edgerly, Caleb W. Leland, Luther Mitchell, and Francis Bowman. Charles E. Gilman was clerk; Oliver Tufts and John C. Magoun, assessors; Edmund Tufts, treasurer and collector. The population was 1,013.

Shortly after Mr. Edgerly was made chairman (and we are told he held that position for fourteen consecutive years), his interest in the welfare of the town was almost paramount to everything else, notwithstanding he did a good business in the grain trade in Boston. He was also on the school committee and overseers of the poor, and always had time to give a helping hand

*Mrs. Edgerly was the daughter of Moses and Lydia Watts Woods, and was born in Hillsboro, N. H., May 1, 1807. There were nine children. Mr. Woods figured quite prominently in military affairs, and was colonel of the Ninth New Hampshire regiment. His father, Moses Woods, 1st, was one of the forty at Concord Bridge who took up arms against the soldiers of King George III, April 19, 1775, and "fired the shot heard round the world." He later came with the regiment that marched to Roxbury March 4, 1776, and still later was first lieutenant in Colonel Samuel Bullard's regiment, that became part of the Northern army.

Mr. and Mrs. Edgerly had three sons and five daughters: John Woods Edgerly, Annie E. W. Edgerly (now Mixer), Charles Brown Edgerly, Adine Franz Edgerly (afterwards Pratt), Helen Mar. Edgerly (now Despeaux), Edward Everett Edgerly, Madeline Lemalfa Edgerly, and Caroline Edgerly.

and a bright and merry word to anyone about him. He never "passed by on the other side," and never was there an empty seat in his carriage or wagon if there was anyone who wanted to be helped along. He represented the town in general court, and on one occasion, when a member of the House, in making a speech, aired his Latin phrases rather too frequently, Mr. Edgerly arose and said: "Mr. Speaker, I move that the gentleman be required to translate his Latin for the benefit of the English-speaking people." Another arose and asked to make an amendment to that motion, to the effect that money be appropriated to educate those people. The joke was appreciated, but had Dr. Edward Everett Hale been present, he would most likely have said: "Not so fast, my friend. Education does not consist in learning Latin, or French, or Sanscrit, or even mathematics, but it is rather the training that develops a man on all sides to take a broad view of life." I am sure there was nothing narrow or sordid in Mr. Edgerly—his observation and experience made him an all-around man. Hence he was sent to the Legislature, and was made a member of the school committee, for though, in a way, we need professional men in such places, we also need good business men, who can not only count the cost, but compute the interest. As overseer of the poor, he was ever ready, after a day of business in Boston, to take his horse and sleigh, and with lantern and shovel make a path to some house where poverty and suffering existed; and the chances are that there was plenty of nutritious food to keep the bodies sustained, while the hearts ached with trouble and misfortune.

It is hard to look back and imagine the streets about Winter Hill and other places so banked up with snow as to need a shovel to start out on one's way; for with the electric cars and electric lights, life seems comparatively easy, and if not a very pleasant evening, there are many who say in these times, "I think we won't go out to-night, it is rather stormy." But with most men of those times duty was a principle, and they did not swerve. Many may say, "But there wasn't so much brain work then; we get more mentally tired." I have heard it said by advocates of physical culture that physical work is the very best antidote for

too much mental labor, and if a girl is overtaxed with study don't send her to a dance for recreation, but rather let her wash dishes, or do some other manual labor that is not exciting. Can you tell me of many men who, like Mr. Edgerly, conducted a regular business in Boston, carried on a small farm at his home, supplied his neighbors with milk and eggs, and had cut \$1,000 worth of hay, besides what he needed for his own cattle and horses? Mr. Edgerly, as I said before, liked everything on a large scale,—the highest horse, the biggest sheep, the largest fowl, and all such things he would buy, and then call the neighbors in to see and enjoy their surprise. He also kept a good driving horse, and often a pretty fast one, and I can recall twice in my memory of his being thrown from his sleigh and dragged some distance; but someone who knew him would bring him home, and in a few days he would be about his duties again.

Mr. Edgerly was for many years on the standing committee of the Unitarian church, and ever stood outside awaiting the last person to enter, that no stranger should lack for a seat. I have heard my father say he would like to be a minister, that he might work all the week and preach on Sunday.

After about thirty years living on Winter Hill, two sons and two daughters having gone out into new homes, Mr. Edgerly sold the Winter-Hill house to Mr. Hittenger, who spent much money on it, but except in removing the front piazza and putting on a porch with a tower, there was not much change.

There were lots of fine, pleasant neighbors, and the first I will mention is John C. Magoun, who, being a farmer, had time to be assessor and one of the overseers of the poor. He occupied both positions several years. He lived in the old Adams place, where his wife was born, married, and died, and one daughter and granddaughter still remain there. His wife had two brothers, Samuel Adams, who was always called "Uncle Sammy," and another, Joseph Adams, who lived down the hill further, and was the father-in-law of Mr. Aaron Sargent, who is well known as the former treasurer of Somerville, previous to the time of our beloved and departed friend, Mr. John F. Cole. Mrs. Magoun had still another brother, Charles Adams, father of the distin-

guished singer. Mr. Magoun was a fine, pleasant looking man, and as I saw his photo yesterday, I could still see the face so benign, as I saw it so many years ago.

Mr. John Boles lived across the way from Mr. Magoun, and though not so well known to the people at large, he and his family were much loved by all the neighbors, and when the Edgerly carryall could not take the children to the high school on a stormy day, the Boles carriage did.

Next came the Woodburys, a large family, and when we needed our houses freshened up, either inside or out, Mr. Woodbury was the man to do it. He was a fine painter, and his graining was so perfect it was almost like the natural wood. Next door to Mr. Edgerly was Mr. William Jaques, with wife and son. Mr. Jaques was one of the three sons of old Colonel Jaques who owned Ten Hills Farm. All the brothers have passed away, but one son and family still remain at the foot of Winter Hill. Uncle Edmund Tufts, so-called, lived nearly opposite, with his charming sister, Aunt Abbie. But they have both passed away, and the site of their little home is occupied by a block of buildings.

I had nearly forgotten to speak of the little schoolhouse, where now stands the Orthodox Congregational church. Here we learned our A B C's. More than one of the teachers boarded at Mr. Edgerly's, for where there is a large family, there is always room for one more.

Next to Edmund Tufts lived Mr. Jonathan Brown, who still answers to the roll-call at ninety-two years, the last of the oldest friends, but his life has been a regular one. Being associated with a bank, his hours were shorter than other business men's, and he had time to enjoy his garden and plenty of choice books. We were always glad on Christmas morning to have the Brown boys bring over their new books, for while we had our share of the good things the Father and Mother Santa Claus brought on "the night before Christmas, when all through the house, not a creature was stirring, not even a mouse," we didn't always have the books our neighbors had, and it was an added pleasure for each to enjoy the other's gifts. Next came Charles Forster's

family. Words fail to express the love and respect everyone felt for this saintly man. I cannot tell his best characteristics, but, literally, "none knew him but to love him, or named him but to praise." The Forster school on Sycamore street is named for him. The Stickney & Poors were among our "smart" and "spicey" friends, and many the good times we had at their expense. There was a saying that they kept a carpenter employed between them all the time, and their homes showed it. It seemed such a pity to me that the Stickney house should be torn down, when, by its being enlarged as it was, it was the most spacious and social of all the homes on Winter Hill. It had been used previously by Mr. Charles Strickland, who was greatly interested in the school work, and also at one time by the Riddles,—parents of the distinguished reader, George Riddle. The Brooks, I must not pass by. Mrs. Brooks was of delicate health, and did not mingle as much with others. Ex-Mayor Perry married the daughter. On the opposite side were Messrs. Oakman & Eldridge, whose houses, when building, it was thought would obstruct the view from the Edgerly mansion, and although they did to some extent, we could still see from the second story, right over their roofs down to the lower light in the harbor.

Mr. Zadoc Bowman lived next door, and though I do not associate him so much in town affairs, he gave us his son, Hon. Selwyn Z. Bowman, so well known in the affairs of the city.

Mr. S. A. Carleton came next, and was, I think, connected with the school board. Mr. Fitz lived and still lives next door to Mr. Carleton. He married into the Magoun family, and was brother to Mrs. Gilbert Tufts and Mrs. Nathan Tufts, 2d. Here I may say another daughter of Mr. Magoun married the nephew of Mrs. Edgerly, and was connected with Mr. Edgerly in his store for a time, and was a member of the household, Mr. Henry F. Woods, who was interested in the school committee, was one of the first of the common council, and also commissioner of the sinking fund.

Mr. William Tufts and Mr. Asa Tufts were among the older residents of the hill, but I don't recall anything especial about them—but they were kindly, pleasant neighbors. Mr. Jacob T.

Glines, though not exactly on the hill, was much interested in town affairs, and his third son has been your honored mayor for the past three or four years. The oldest son was sacrificed in the Civil War. I might go on indefinitely enumerating names of good friends around us, but I must close the list by simply the mention of the Downers, the other Woodburys, the Hardings, the Spencers, and Sawyers, etc., etc.

After leaving Winter Hill, Mr. Edgerly moved to East Somerville, where he lived at 1 and 3 Webster street some years, and passed away January 20, 1872. His wife followed him about ten years later, and there now remain but two of the large family who so dearly loved the old spot that our infancy and childhood so fondly knew on Winter Hill.

There is an Edgerly schoolhouse on Cross street, East Somerville, and as long as it stands may it prove an honor to the honored memory of John S. Edgerly.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHIN THE PENINSULA REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD

Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

We have seen that Mr. Sweetser's resignation as master of the grammar school went into effect March 6, 1750 (O. S.). The day before, a committee, consisting of James Russell, Ebenezer Kent, Edward Sheafe, Jr., Samuel Bradstreet, and Samuel Henley, "met to see about a new master and perhaps a second man to teach writing." Mr. John Rand was engaged to finish out the term until May, at twenty shillings per week. This committee reported that "it is for the interest of the town to have two masters, one for teaching Latin, the other for writing and arithmetic, as it is impossible for any one man to teach the children of the town in both capacities."

In May the town voted a marvelous sum, as compared with the amounts of previous years,—£900, old tenor,—for two schools within the Neck; and as if to satisfy our curiosity, the record

explains that this is equivalent to £120 lawful money. On the fifth of June, as the committee had secured no teachers, they asked for more time. July 6, 1750, Mr. Timothy Goodwin, no doubt a native of Charlestown, was hired to teach in the old town house, as it was desired to put the school building in repair. This engagement evidently did not hold, for it is recorded, along with a second request for more time, that the committee have agreed with Mr. Matthew Cushing to keep the grammar school, at a rate of £60 lawful money, and that he began June 12; and with Mr. Abijah Hartt to keep the writing school, at the same rate, and that he opened his school July 19. We are also told that the old town house can be fitted up for about £34. This sum is accordingly voted, and it is understood that this building will be for the use of the Latin school.

I have been unable to learn anything of these two teachers. Mr. Cushing, we have seen, was keeping a private school in Charlestown at the time of his appointment. He was doubtless descended from Matthew Cushing, one of the early settlers of Hingham. The history of that town mentions a Matthew, son of Solomon and Sarah (Loring) Cushing, born April 4, 1720, a graduate of Harvard College, 1739, who removed to New York, and died there in 1779. This may be the Charlestown teacher.

Evidently there were two sides to the school question, and many were dissatisfied with the way Mr. Sweetser had been treated; for at the next May meeting, 1751, the town voted to have but one schoolmaster within the Neck for the present year, and it is recorded that there will be no appropriation "until the choice of a schoolmaster be made." The meeting then and there, "by hand vote," elected Mr. Seth Sweetser as master of the grammar and writing school for the year ensuing, and his salary was fixed at £500, equivalent to £66 13s. 4d., lawful money. "He accepts, and will begin when the other master's term expires." Mr. Cushing was paid in full up to the date when he was dismissed, and Mr. Hartt received £30, lawful money, in full to July 19, 1751.

Under the same date, the record continues: "Considering the disorder of the youth of this town, not only on week days,

but on the Lord's Day, it was voted to visit the school every three months with one of the ministers of the town, & to use our best endeavors to put a stop thereto, & to begin to-morrow, the day Mr. Sweetser takes possession. Accordingly, the selectmen, with Rev. Mr. Hull Abbott, visited the school, and told the scholars they were determined the guilty should not go unpunished; after which Mr. Abbott exhorted them in a solemn manner & concluded with prayer."

October 19. "The selectmen with Rev. Mr. Prentise visited the school & think the method will have the desired effect. The visit ended with prayer."

There is frequent mention of "visiting day" up to 1775; after that date, to the end of the century, though not a matter of record, except at intervals, it was evidently a custom held in high respect. The august body of selectmen was sometimes increased on these occasions by the presence of the overseers of the poor. One of the ministers was always invited, and often he was accompanied by his deacons. From these visits we learn that the schools were in session six days in the week. Frequently the hour set was 10 o'clock on Saturday.

The two ministers whom we have named for many years exercised their hortatory powers on the Charlestown boys. The following digression may not be uninteresting. In 1733 the town built a ministerial house for Mr. Abbott, "50 ft. by 19 ft. and 18 ft. high, with a gambrel roof, three stacks of chimneys, & a room 10 ft. square at the backside for a study." On the death of Mrs. Abbott in 1763, there was a public funeral, and the amount raised was £414 4s. 10d., or, in lawful money, £55 4s. 7d. At the funeral of the worthy gentleman himself, who was buried at the expense of the town, some of the charges were: For twelve gold rings, £8; for Lisbon wine, Malaga wine, and W. I. rum, £5 16s. 8d.; for lemons, sugar, pipes, and tobacco, £3 8s. 6d.; gloves, £40 1s. 6d.; death'shead and cross bones, fifteen shillings. The Rev. Thomas Prentice died June 17, 1782, and that day a special town meeting was called, to see what action the citizens would take "relative to the funeral."

Late in 1751 this little community suffered from a visitation more terrible than that which came upon Master Sweetser's boys,—the smallpox broke out, though not for the first time. A petition read at town meeting the following May shows that the people of the outlying districts tried to keep the disease from spreading among them. "Forty inhabitants (without the Neck) prayed that the meeting may be adjourned without the Neck by reason of the smallpox being in town. Voted that this meeting do not adjourn without the Neck." Later on, however, the point seems to have been carried, for June 9 "it was voted to adjourn the town meeting to the Common by reason of the Infection." In 1764 there was another smallpox "scare," and April 4, in reply to the question "whether the town will give the inhabitants leave to go into innoculation for themselves & families at all," it was voted in the affirmative.

March 4, 1754. It was voted that the old town house be improved for a spinning (girls') school. The next May Mr. Daniel Russell was made chairman of a committee of three for this school, and £64 was appropriated for repairs. One hundred and fifty pounds was also voted for renovating the meeting house, schoolhouse, and other public property. This is the first evidence, so far as I find, that the daughters of the town were getting any direct benefit from the taxes that were paid by their fathers. It was an experiment that probably did not last long.

The amount of £500, or its equivalent, £66 13s. 4d., lawful money, was voted annually for the grammar master until 1764. July 2 of that year, "it was voted that, instead of an addition being made to the present school, the committee make such repairs as are of necessity & likewise repair the Old Town House suitable for another master whose business shall be to instruct in writing & cyphering, & that the sum of £50, l. m., be raised to procure one." This sum was afterwards increased to £55, and in January the bill for repairs on the schoolhouse amounted to £14 11s. May 12, 1766, upon petition of William Harris, writing teacher, desiring an addition to his salary, the town agreed to give him the same as the grammar master received. The

amount for each remained at this figure, £66 13s. 4d., lawful money, until 1775. That year we do not find any sum appropriated for the schools. In fact, the town records show no entry of the selectmen's proceedings from April 7 to November 24, 1775. February 10 they voted to make their usual spring visit the following Friday morning. The next item relating to the town school is under date of March 6, 1776, less than a fortnight before Evacuation Day, when it was voted that Mr. Harris have an order for his salary in full as writing teacher to April 19, 1775. This entry seems to us a significant one. From that Thursday morning, September 1, 1774, when the Old Powder House was surprised and rifled of its stores by the British, excitement ran high in Charlestown, Cambridge, and the immediate neighborhood. The historian Frothingham has left us a vivid picture of the harrowing events which tried men's souls. All through the succeeding fall and winter there were meetings of anxious men in council. Minutes of their proceedings had to be sent to similar bodies in other sections, inquiries answered, resolutions drafted. Altogether, Mr. Sweetser, the faithful guardian of the grammar school, as clerk and corresponding secretary of these conventions, may well have had his mind diverted from his pupils. On the nineteenth of April, we are told, the scholars were dismissed and Charlestown school closed. When it opened again—we are not told exactly when—the scourge of war had done its fearful work. The four hundred buildings clustered at the foot of Breed's Hill were practically wiped away. On that memorable seventeenth of June, Frothingham says, "The conflagration spared not a dwelling house," and a population of two or three thousand were rendered homeless. But from the day of the Concord and Lexington fight, when thrilling incidents occurred on our own soil of Somerville, the inhabitants had abandoned their homes on the peninsula, and the place was practically deserted. On account of the menacing position of the enemy's ships, no attempt to bring back order and domestic quiet was made until after the Evacuation.

The two school buildings which have interested us so long thus ended their careers of usefulness at the same time. The last

item we find concerning either of them is under date of October 15, 1770, when Captain Foster was made chairman of a committee of three to make repairs on the floor of the writing school. Hon. Josiah Bartlett, M. D., in his historical sketch, delivered at the opening of Washington Hall in 1813, tells us somewhat exactly where these two structures were located on Windmill or Town Hill. At the town meeting of May 16, 1776, it was voted not to raise any money (for schools), "supposing the town income will defray the charges that will unavoidably arise." Expenses had to be brought within the smallest figure, and the schools suffered in consequence. October 10 of that year, however, things were looking somewhat brighter, for it was decided to raise £60 for the schools within and without the Neck. But no attempt at re-building or finding permanent quarters for the Charlestown school, which for several years after this was reduced to one, was made the year of the battle, or even the next. We will leave this part of our subject, to speak of the two teachers to whom frequent reference has been made.

Captain William Harris was the only son of Cary Harris, of Boston. He was born July 2, 1744, and married in 1767 Rebecca, the daughter of Thaddeus Mason, Esq. (Harvard College, 1728). He died October 30, 1778, at the early age of thirty-four. Of his six children, the eldest, Thaddeus Mason Harris, D. D., born in Charlestown in 1768, and a graduate of Harvard in 1787, was one of the distinguished divines of his time. For many years he was settled over the church at Dorchester, where he died in 1842. William Harris must have begun his school duties in Charlestown in 1765, for December 7, 1767, the selectmen voted him £1 16s. for ink "for two years past." We have seen that his services ended with the disbanding of his scholars April 19, 1775.

[To be continued.]

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1904

Vol. III

No. 3

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
THOMAS BRIGHAM THE PURITAN—AN ORIGINAL SETTLER	<i>William E. Brigham</i> 49
THE TEACHING OF LOCAL HISTORY IN THE PUBLIC SCHOOLS	<i>John S. Emerson</i> 57
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHIN THE PENINSULA (continued)	<i>Frank Mortimer Hawes</i> 64
QUINCY ADAMS VINAL (with frontispiece)	<i>Charles D. Elliot</i> 70

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio*

SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



QUINCY ADAMS VINAL

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. III.

OCTOBER, 1904

No. 3

THOMAS BRIGHAM THE PURITAN—AN ORIGINAL SETTLER

By William E. Brigham

Thomas Brigham the Puritan, the common ancestor of the Brigham family in this country, was an original, if not the original, settler of what now is Somerville. I may say frankly at the outset that I have made no study of the contemporaries of Thomas, nor have I ascertained the location of the original town lines of Watertown, Cambridge, and Charlestown; but for the purposes of this sketch the familiar designations are sufficient. In so far as they deal with the essential facts of the life of our interesting subject and his descendants, the statements which follow are founded upon trustworthy evidence; and where there is doubt I have indicated it.

For example, good old Rev. Abner Morse, the first genealogist of the Brigham family, would have it that Thomas came of noble blood, in direct descent from the lords of Allerdale, whose reputation for "courtesy, honor, truth, and justice" filled all Cumberland; and the worthy clergyman works into his pages the sage suggestion to posterity that "it is scandalous to degenerate."

Later researches prove nothing more definite of the English origin of Thomas the Puritan than a strong inference that he hailed from Yorkshire. There are four Brigham places in Great Britain, as follows:—

First—Town of Brigham, Driffild, in Dickering Wapentake, East Riding, Yorkshire; and it is germane to say that a large percentage of the people of this neighborhood are known by the surname of Brigham.

Second—There is a Brigham parish in Allerdale Ward, above Derwent, Cumberlandshire. To this locality tradition assigns the vague (because ancient) references to the manor of

Brigham and the lords of Allerdale. Wordsworth penned a graceful sonnet to the "Nun's Well" of this place.

Third—From the Acts of Parliament of Scotland we learn how that assembly convened at Brigham, near Berwick-on-Tweed, on two occasions during the period when it was peripatetic, namely, in 1188 and 1289. You will also recall that a "treaty of Brigham" was signed here.

Fourth—Brigham, Norfolk county, Eng., which is mentioned in the Calendar Close Rolls, time of King Edward II.

The Domesday Book mentions also four other Brigham towns, under various spellings, but they are of no important interest in the present connection.

Burke describes eight different armorial bearings by Brig-hams, of which four are of Yorkshire families, and a fifth of York-shire descent. The most persistent Brigham line occurs in connection with the annals of Yorkshire; but late researches incline to the belief that there were no less than four distinct Brigham lines, from one of which sprang Thomas. The belief that this was of Yorkshire is strengthened by the fact that Sir Richard Saltonstall, his friend and neighbor in Cambridge, and upon whose suggestion he may have come from England, was of a Yorkshire family.

Without detaining you too long with details of more remote interest, I may say that the name Brigham has been spelled in no less than eighteen different ways. It is Anglo-Saxon, and comes from two words meaning bridge and house. It originally signified a village of freemen situated by a bridge. The name is authentically traced back to the period of Henry I., who was born in 1068; and it is said by English Brig-hams now living that it was borne with honor in Palestine in the time of the Crusades.

I fear, however, that we are getting farther away rather than nearer to Thomas Brigham the Puritan. The first and only authentic mention of him found in England is in Camden Hot-ten's book, entitled "Lists of Emigrants from England to America, 1600-1700," compiled from London Admiralty reports.

From this we learn that "18 April, 1635, Tho. Briggham" embarked from England on the ship "Suzan & Ellin, Edward

Payne, Master," for New England. In the same year Paige, in his admirable history of Cambridge, reports the arrival at Watertown, the fourth settlement in Massachusetts Bay colony, of our Thomas and thirty-six other males. Of these, some seventeen appear to have come by the "Suzan and Ellin." Surely we of the name of Brigham may trace our ancestry back to the foundation stones of the old commonwealth.

Thomas was then thirty-two years of age, and he appears quickly to have attained to respect and prominence. He was made a "freeman" in 1637, when his name first appears on the records of Watertown. He then became the proprietor of a fourteen-acre lot, of seven-eighths of the size and adjoining that of Sir Richard Saltonstall. This land was "bought of John Dogget & bounded W. by the homestall of Sir Richard Saltonstall, S. by Charles River, & E. by Cambridge former line," being on that strip which was taken from Watertown in 1754 and annexed to Cambridge.

He settled hard by, and built his house in Cambridge, on a lot of three and one-half acres which had been assigned him by the townsmen in 1638. The exact location of our Puritan's homestead cannot be stated. Paige places it at the easterly corner of Brattle and Ash streets. Morse quotes the boundaries of the lot, which would be unintelligible to this audience, but says it was about two-thirds of a mile west of the site of Harvard University—which institution was established, by the way, a year after Thomas the Puritan arrived in Cambridge; while our own family historian, W. I. T. Brigham, is sure only that a part of Thomas Brigham's house lot was in the east boundary line of the original limits of Watertown, or about at the line of the present Sparks street. It is certain that the lot was bounded on the south by the northern bend of Charles river, which comes at the foot of Sparks street.

At this point was the first high bank above the site of Fort Washington, and it offered the first facility on the north side for a wharf. Here, according to trustworthy tradition, a wharf was built early, and no doubt a storehouse to accommodate the inhabitants of Watertown and Cambridge, which had no wharf

until 1650. Morse kindly infers that Thomas Brigham built these, and that he was a commission merchant. Windmill Hill, he says, must have been upon his Watertown lot and near the wharf. Had he not, asks Morse, also built a mill thereon prior to 1638, when the townsmen assigned the land adjacent to him on the southeast, and reserved a highway on the town line to this hill, which would also have secured access to the wharf?

The south side of his original fourteen-acre lot is at present a poor Irish settlement; but the north runs through to Brattle street, along which it extends many hundred feet, right in the heart of Cambridge upper-tendom. The Washington school, descendant of the "Faire Grammar Schoole," the first school in Cambridge, is on this land.

With Saltonstall, Dudley, Nicholas Danforth, and other chief men for his neighbors and associates, Thomas Brigham lived on his comfortable homestead until 1648. Having been admitted to the freeman's oath, he, in 1639, was chosen a member of the board of townsmen, who exercised supreme authority in municipal matters, and had the distribution of the public lands. He served as townsman or selectman in 1640, 1642, and 1647, and as constable in 1639 and 1642. Such honors as these at that period cannot be lightly esteemed now.

He was the proprietor of many animals, and in 1647, when the town contained ninety houses, 135 ratable citizens, and had been settled seventeen years, he owned nearly one-third of all the swine. Morse argued, also, from this honorable, but unpoetic, fact that he must have possessed a mill, from the toll of which he could easily feed so large a number.

The proud possession of these hogs is not also without its sad feature for the descendants of Thomas the Puritan; for while it gave him the distinction of wealth, and therefore power, it also got him into trouble. He was repeatedly fined for failing to observe the law relative to the keeping of hogs. However, as if in consideration of the feelings of his descendants, it is recorded that the selectmen, in their order for collecting fines of "brother Brigham," as they called him, voluntarily abated one-third of the amount.

From another curious record now extant it is learned, also, that the good Thomas was not without other than official sympathy; for it is soberly related in the chronicles that upon one occasion, when an officer visited the homestead to impound some of the porcine offenders, or upon other similar duty, the worthy Mercy, spouse of Goodman Thomas, made such a hostile demonstration that he was fain to escape with no bones broken.

We have been a long time reaching the Somerville line, but we are almost here. The townsmen of Cambridge divided the common lands to settlers according to their estates. By this rule Thomas Brigham drew more than quadruple the amount of most others. In the last and principal division he, out of 115 assignees, received 180 acres, the thirteenth largest share, while others received only a few acres. He received grants in Brighton, Shawshine (Billerica), West Cambridge, and Charlestown, amounting to hundreds of acres. His first grant in Charlestown was of one acre made in 1645.

In 1648 there was laid out to him seventy-two acres "on the rocks" upon Charlestown line; and later in the same year he bought of William Hamlet ten acres in Fresh Pond Meadow, on the northwest side of the great swamp. Of these he took immediate possession, and built upon the former.

By the help of Peter B. Brigham, Esq., who died in 1872, "The Rocks" have been found and the place of our old settler's last habitation identified. To quote Morse, who wrote in 1859, the site is now in Somerville, "about one-third of a mile south of Tufts College, and 100 rods east of Cambridge Poorhouse, on the southwest side of an uplift of clay slate about seventy feet in height, overlooking Fresh Pond one and one-half miles at the south."

A few rods southwest of this, continues Morse, there is another uplift of the same formation and of about the same size and altitude, but the rock does not, as in the former, crop out, yet it was doubtless one of "The Rocks" which constituted a well-known landmark; for Thomas Danforth, as if connected with Thomas Brigham, immediately after the above assignment, purchased of Nicholas Wyeth forty-eight acres "upon the Rocks

near Alewife meadow, having Thos. Brigham on the north." This lot must have included the site of the poorhouse, and probably the S. W. rock, and by its boundaries it contributes to the identification of Brigham's location, which had been ascertained from other evidence.

I have perambulated the territory described here by Mr. Morse, yet without my assurance I think you would readily conceive that the second homestead of the Brigham family in this country is none other than our own Clarendon Hill, and that "The Rocks," so celebrated in our family history, are now serving the humble purpose of the city stone quarry. The house, I take it, was only a few yards, or rods, south of the present crown of the quarry, and commanded a view straight across the meadow to Fresh Pond. As the pious Morse says:—

"Here lived Thomas Brigham, contented with his portion of good things, which the millionaire is not. Here he read his Bible and communed with his Redeemer. Here he interceded for his race, completed his victory, and left for his coronation. Hallowed be the place; hallowed his memory! Here let his children assemble to praise and pray, know and be known; and build up a friendship strong and enduring as 'The Rocks.'"

Thomas Brigham died in the Somerville homestead, if I may so call it, December 18, 1653, aged fifty years. His estate became involved, perhaps through business reverses—it is suggested because the erection of a grist mill on Charles river ruined his windmill—yet it was more than respectable for the time. After the final settlement, there remained his lot on Charles river, valued at £40; upland and meadow in the hither end of Watertown, valued at £60; ten acres in Rockie Meadow, valued at £15; and a house lot of four acres, with house and barn, estimated at £70. He left a spacious house, containing hall, parlor, kitchen and two chambers, all completely furnished and stored with provisions.

His personal property included many articles of luxury, and his wardrobe was that of a gentleman. He had two bound "servants, five horses, fourteen sheep, and ten cattle," and his inventory footed up £449 4s. 9d., or about \$8,000 in our present cur-

rency, relative prices considered. Morse reckons that at six per cent. the fortune of Thomas Brigham the Puritan would amount to more than a billion of dollars now. This is a crowning example of the old genealogist's concern for posterity.

The wife was appointed sole executrix of the will. She was assisted by the distinguished William Brattle, of Boston, and Deputy Governor Thomas Danforth accepted appointment as trustee, and left the trust to his own executor at his death.

The final resting place of our common ancestor is not known. Morse thinks it must have been Medford, but there is much stronger reason for believing it to be in Cambridge, probably in what is known as the "old cemetery." Time has buried a fact of priceless interest to the descendants of Thomas the Puritan, and the spot may never be marked.

It were unfair to close this record without a word of the partner of the joys and sorrows of our Thomas. In 1637 he married Mercy Hurd, a comely woman somewhat his junior, of whom tradition has brought down a high character. It is declared that she and her sister were so tantalized in England for their non-conformity that they resolved on seeking their freedom and fortunes in New England, whither they arrived unattended by husbands or lovers. Were romantic adventure their quest, they came to the right place, for they were snapped up like Monday bargains; and, as the sage Morse observes, if the number of worthy husbands whom a lady married is the measure of her worth, our maternal ancestor was a most worthy and attractive woman, for she married no less than three.

These were Thomas Brigham, who died in 1653, by whom she had five children; Edmund Rice, of Marlboro, by whom she had two daughters; and William Hunt, of Marlboro, who died in 1667. Mercy Hurd-Brigham-Rice-Hunt died December 23, 1693, after a third widowhood of twenty-six years.

During this period she saw two bloody Indian wars. During the first Marlboro was burned, and she, with one of her sons, is believed to have fled to their former home on "The Rocks" in Somerville, while her other sons went in pursuit of the enemy.

The children of Thomas and Mercy Hurd-Brigham were

Mary, Thomas, John, Hannah, and Samuel. All were identified with the early history of Marlboro, whence their mother had removed upon the death of Thomas the Puritan. The men became very prominent in town life, and Samuel, it is said, founded the tanning and shoe industry. The present writer, although coming immediately from a branch resident in Vermont, is a direct descendant of Thomas, the first son.

This, at greater length than I had intended, is something of the story of Thomas Brigham the Puritan. Cradle and grave alike unknown, of his life there is yet left a record of honor, probity, and rugged accomplishment in which his descendants may well take honest pride.

In justice to Mr. Brigham, it is no more than right that the following letter should be printed:—

Boston, September 25, 1904.

My dear Mr. Foss: I have at hand yours of the 24th inst., with proof of my article on Thomas Brigham the Puritan.

I am afraid there is some misunderstanding in this matter, for the evening I read the paper I made the express request that it be not printed. Mr. Charles D. Elliot is inclined to think the original Brigham place was in Arlington rather than in Somerville, and some of his facts and arguments so impressed me that I decided at once to give no more publicity to the matter until I could investigate further. Mr. Elliot kindly offered to take up the matter with me at my convenience, but I was out of town from May to September, and since have been immersed in another (and this time victorious) political campaign. I can give the matter no thought until after election.

My error, if there is one, is due to my confidence in the alleged researches made by the late Peter B. Brigham, as reported by Morse (page 4, "Brigham," by Rev. Abner Morse, A. M., press of H. W. Dutton & Son, Boston, 1859). The identification here is explicit, but the description of the old site is that of Morse, I should judge.

"The Rocks" was the name of the old Brigham place, and Mr. Elliot points out two important facts: one, that there is no mention of Thomas Brigham in the early Charlestown records, which were well kept; and that "The Rocks" was the name of "a well-known ancient landmark," as Morse styles it, in Arlington, not in Somerville.

Brigham's identification was wholly with Arlington (or Cambridge), except in the matter of this site; and even before Mr. Elliot spoke it always had puzzled me why Thomas should have trekked off to Clarendon Hill, while his affiliations were all with the banks of the Charles river in Cambridge.

My own pride of authorship never was very great, anyway, and in this instance I am only too glad to sacrifice it in the interest of historical accuracy.

If it would save you embarrassment, I suppose you might print the sketch with this letter as a footnote, but even that is a little awkward, at least, for me. I am, however, always an extremely busy man, and if the publication of this paper and correspondence would bring me any volunteer aid in clearing up a matter which is of some local interest, and of especial interest to the Brigham Family Association, which is now preparing a new "Brigham Book," I would welcome it.

Sincerely yours,

William E. Brigham.

THE TEACHING OF LOCAL HISTORY IN THE PUBLIC SCHOOLS

By John S. Emerson

Someone has said, "Geography is the eyes of history." How true is this in the region where one lives! The boy is on the very ground, to start with. He will follow the teacher's "On the top of that hill" with all of his mind, but the spot on the map of some distant region with his eye only. The men and the scenes of the Revolution are almost as impersonal and vague as those of which he reads in his morning devotional exercises. But show him the ground they trod, the houses in which they lived and slept, and they become real men instead of names only. His pictures of scenes become realistic and vivid. His attitude immediately changes from passive to active. He becomes not merely a recipient, but an investigator. He will work from pure love of his subject,—a difficult result to secure in many other matters.

The following are two of many incidents that might be given to illustrate the enthusiastic interest children naturally take in this subject. After the first lesson of the year on Somerville history, the teacher had an errand on Prospect Hill. On the way up, he met some of the class coming down. The next morning one of them said before school, "You went up to see where the flag was raised, and to read the tablet, didn't you?" He had to confess that he had another errand, but was glad to say that he visited the spot. The pupil said, "We went up and read the tab-

let and hunted for the old tent-holes said to be visible still. We tried to imagine the place and the country round as it looked then. I wish," she added, "I could live, if only for a week or so, in those times, to see how this region looked, and to see the men,—Washington and Putnam and the rest."

The regular course in history had been covered, but the teacher had not known of any such longings to live in another century, to see for herself how things were, and how the country looked. That first lesson in local history had come home, had appealed to the imagination, and had thoroughly aroused the interest.

A few years ago, in the city of Malden, in a school not far from the site of the first meeting house erected in that region, a discussion arose as to what had become of the old bell that had been mounted near the meeting house on an eminence still known as Bell Rock. It was learned that, strange and unusual as it may be, dissension had arisen in the little church, due rather to the differences and strength of opinions than to the size of the society, and that one roof would not comfortably cover the warring brothers and sisters. Another meeting house having been built, a struggle for possession of the bell began. One party hid it in the well of the near-by parsonage. This was as far as the children could trace it. One morning the boys, quite excited about the matter, suggested a plan to "chip in," as they said, and have the bell dug up. Further inquiries, however, revealed the fact that it had been raised, and placed on a schoolhouse, and when that structure was destroyed years after, the bell was broken up and the pieces distributed about town. Finally one of the class triumphantly brought a piece of the same old bell to school. A trifling affair, truly, but the spontaneous, enthusiastic interest in the early history of the place, indicated by the persistent efforts of the children and by their readiness to contribute their money to secure and preserve an old relic, is no trifle.

There are, however, serious difficulties operating against the teaching of this important subject. The teacher who is without family ties in the place, or other than a professional association with it, is quite apt to lack not only a knowledge of its past, but

also an interest in it. But assuming a willingness to do this work, she looks over the course of study and her program to find a place for it,—possibly to see what she can omit. Can we blame her if the latter is the stronger motive? Consider, there are but five hours in a school day,—the child's day, not the teacher's—and in them she must teach, somehow and at some time, reading, writing, arithmetic, bookkeeping, spelling, geography, grammar and language, drawing and painting, music, sewing, science, or nature studies, physiology, with special lessons on narcotics and stimulants, study of selected authors and their representative works, manners and morals, besides keeping all the school machinery running smoothly and properly. There are many other things, almost "too numerous to mention," not laid down in the course of study. She must prepare special exercises for the sessions preceding public holidays, regularly inspect, count, and repair books, keep registers and pupils' records, make frequent reports to parents and to school officials, etc. In the multiplicity of subjects crowded into the school, something is sure to be squeezed. It will be that of which the teacher has the least knowledge to begin with, and in which the requirements and the supervision are least exacting. Hence the neglect of local history.

Teachers are provided with nothing but an incomplete, ill-arranged list of topics, and are wholly without desk reference books.

But in spite of difficulties, it is possible to accomplish much. Local history does not call for great teaching ability. Given a little acquaintance on the part of the children with the library method of study, a correct outline, and an atmosphere of freedom and enjoyment in the room, and the enthusiasm of the children will give the teacher an hour's pleasure as often as she will take up the subject.

As to materials, the available sources of information are Frothingham's "History of Charlestown" and Drake's "History of Middlesex County." There is an excellent history, also, of this city included in "Somerville Past and Present," written by our historian, Mr. Charles D. Elliot. If that part of

the book could be separated and have added to it condensed sketches from other portions of the work, it would be of great value in the schools. "Past and Present" is too expensive for very general use, and contains much that is not usable. A few copies of this work will, however, appear in each class, furnished by pupils, and are the chief reliance. There is an abridged edition of Drake's "History of Middlesex County" which, if placed upon the teachers' desks, would be of great service.

The public library contains some historical addresses suited to our purposes. Among them is that of ex-Mayor William H. Furber, July 4, 1876, treating of original territory included in Charlestown, purchase of Somerville territory from the Indians, hills and their fortifications, seizure of powder from the old mill, separation from Charlestown, growth, street railways, Somerville in the Civil War, and adoption of the city charter. Another by Mr. John S. Hayes includes first explorers, visit of John Smith and of Miles Standish, Winthrop's coming, division of land, siege of Boston, Burgoyne's troops on Prospect Hill, Paul Revere's ride, first school and first schoolhouse.

"Historic Heights and Points" gives a brief sketch of the fortifications and their importance.

Somerville's history is worthy of study *per se*. The life of the city has been continuous and progressive, and the children who graduate from our schools should have a knowledge sufficiently comprehensive and orderly to enable them to trace her history from the time the land was inhabited by Indians to the present.

Some such outline as the following will illustrate the orderly treatment of matter. Much of Somerville's history has been determined, or, at least, influenced by her topography, and so it is well to begin with that. Then will follow the aboriginal life, the Indian tribes, and also:—

Web Cowit and Squaw Sachem.

First visits by white men.

First settlers.

Coming of Winthrop; Ten Hills Farm.

Title from the Indians.

Division of land.

The stinted commons.

Rangeways.

Early roads.

Life in the colonial period.

Somerville's connection with the Revolution, including :—

Capture of powder from the old mill.

(Legend of the mill.)

Paul Revere's ride.

Battle of Lexington and Concord.

(Route through Somerville.)

(Fighting on Somerville soil.)

Battle of Bunker Hill.

Siege of Boston.

(General plan of fortification.)

(Somerville's fortifications.)

(Memorial battery on Central Hill.)

(Raising of first flag of Continental army.)

(Quartering of Burgoyne's captured troops.)

(Residences of generals, and other houses of note.)

Growth of this portion of Charlestown.

Prominent persons.

Industrial and commercial life.

(Middlesex Canal.)

(Railroads, steam and street.)

(Manufacturing enterprises.)

Separation from Charlestown.

Reasons.

Date.

Name and why selected.

Somerville in the Civil War.

Change from town government to city.

Date, charters, seal.

Mayors and a few other prominent officials.

To this should be added a sketch of the educational history of the city, with a brief history of the particular school which the child attends, together with a brief account of the man whose

name it bears, noting the traits and events that prove him worthy the honor. Sub-divisions of some of these topics would, of course, be made as events require, my effort being directed to an orderly arrangement with topics broad enough to include all the knowledge that may be gained, with a place for every fact. The arrangement is, in the main, necessarily chronological, excepting that under such topics as education or religious life, we should bring together in order all the facts, from earliest to present times; or, again, if we are studying the business life of the city, we should go back to first conditions and follow events, searching for the causes and influences which have affected its growth and development.

Under "Charter," there should be a study of our city government, the departments, the duties and powers of each, and methods of transacting business, elections, etc.

The schools should be provided with a standard text-book of local history, but others more complete should be accessible to the children, not a single copy or two, but in sufficient number to meet the demands of many pupils. Much material contained in souvenir editions of our papers and in souvenir books and pamphlets that cannot be bought for the schools because of the advertising in them can be brought by pupils from their homes, and used by them as their own property. The information gained will be useful in later years, so many of our pupils are making histories for themselves, in which they write brief statements of facts, references to sources of information, illustrated by clippings from papers and souvenir books, small pictures of historic spots and of prominent men.

Quite a demand has been made of late by the children for photographs after the plan of the Perry pictures and the Brown pictures, but of Somerville subjects, and a proposition is under consideration to print large quantities of them to sell at a very low cost. The camera craze is being turned to good use, and interest in history thereby increased.

Collections and exhibits of relics borrowed for the occasion also add to the interest. The reading of poems, such as Mr. Foss's "Raising of the Flag on Prospect Hill," and the narration,

orally or with the pen, of the stories and legends of the past, are not only profitable, but sources of much pleasure.

Excursions in the hours after school and on holidays, walks, bicycle rides, and the customary annual sleighrides may be made doubly beneficial by directing them to historic shrines.

The topical method of study and recitation should of course be used, as has been indicated already, but there should be no regularity in calling upon pupils to recite in this particular subject. All such efforts should be entirely voluntary. The assignment of a topic should be considered a compliment, to recite a privilege. I would keep no marks and have no penalties. However much we may believe in tasks in other subjects, I would banish all suggestions of them in connection with local history. It should be a work of love, and the class exercise should be characterized by the utmost freedom and enthusiasm.

This society does well to interest itself in the promotion of this study. We must begin early if we would successfully cope with the commercial spirit, the selfishness that would destroy old landmarks, if we would preserve the relics and documents of the past. But on this latter point another society is earlier in the field. The Massachusetts Historical Society recently sent to the State Board of Education a request that an effort be made to interest the school children in the preservation of old documents supposed to be lying about in attics and other repositories of rubbish. The secretary of the board therefore prepared a circular, to be sent to the various towns and cities, requesting children to collect such material and to place it in the custody of that society for preservation and use when required.

The teaching of Somerville history, the record of its life, should beget in the minds of her young people a respect and pride for her past and her present success. It should at least diminish that longing for change to some other place,—no matter where,—so common with them, and teach a devotion to the city and its institutions, an attachment to even its soil, which shall hold through life. Southey says, "Whatever strengthens our local attachments is favorable both to individual and national character. Show me the man who cares no more for one place

than another, and I will show you in that same person one who loves nothing but himself. Beware of those who are homeless by choice. You have no hold upon a person whose affections are without a tap-root."

The boys and girls of this section of our country have a proud heritage. It was no mean people who came to this region. No poorhouses, workhouses, or prisons were opened to populate our soil, and to ease the burdens of another country. It was a liberty-loving, high-minded people, jealous of their rights as freemen, who began here to build a state, and Mrs. Hemans's words,

"Ay, call it holy ground,
The soil where first they trod,"

may well be applied to Somerville.

Lord Macaulay says, "A people who take no pride in the achievements of remote ancestors will never achieve anything worthy to be remembered with pride by remote descendants."

In this intelligent pride of our young people there is for us the strongest possible guaranty of good government, and of municipal success and prosperity in the years to come.

The public statutes require the teaching of the history of the country and of lessons of patriotism, but it is left for the people of this city to see to it that our schools teach *her* history, and implant loyal devotion to her interests.

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHIN THE PENINSULA REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD

By Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

In giving our brief sketch of Mr. Sweetser, we are not able to state precisely when his term of service ended as schoolmaster. January 20, 1755, he was chosen town clerk till the March meeting. In May, 1761, and perhaps earlier, he was serving in that capacity permanently. He held this office until his death, which occurred suddenly January 15, 1778. His school labors, like those of Mr. Harris, may have ended with the disastrous events

of 1775. An obituary notice of him may be found in the Boston Gazette, under date of his death. Seth Sweetser, Jr., born February 5, 1704, was of the fourth generation from the original settler of the same name, who came to this country from Tring, Hertfordshire, Eng. He graduated from Harvard College in the class of 1722, and, with the exception of the year 1750-'51, was schoolmaster in his native town from July, 1724, for fully fifty years thereafter. He was held in high esteem by his fellow-citizens, and served on many important committees prior to and during the first years of the Revolution. The name of his mother was Sarah Clark. He married Hannah Bradish, who is said to have died in 1800, at the advanced age of ninety-four. They had thirteen children, of whom Henry Phillips Sweetser was prominent in Charlestown affairs for many years. This was the father of Colonel John Sweetser, styled architect by Wyman, who built for John Olin, Jr., in the early years of the last century, the house at the top of Winter Hill, once occupied by Edward Everett, and for many years owned by John S. Edgerly. Later, as most people know, it was extensively repaired by Mr. Hittenger, its next owner, who left its style of architecture as we now see it.

Another teacher of this period was Robert Calley, but we are at a loss just when to place him. He may have acted as substitute or assistant for Mr. Sweetser during the last years of that gentleman's career. We are indebted to Wyman for our account of him. He was the son of Robert and Lydia (Stimpson) Calley, and was born in Charlestown June 4, 1726. He was twice married, and the father of six children, most of whom died in infancy. He was on the tax list from 1748 to 1763, and his widow in 1771 was No. 44 on a list of valuations. His mother was the sister of Rev. Joseph Stimpson, a former teacher of Charlestown, mentioned in an earlier article of this series, and the cousin of Seth Sweetser. The most interesting thing about this Robert Calley is that he left a manuscript diary in eight volumes. Wyman made an extract of the genealogical material therein contained, and this little book is to be seen in the library of the Massachusetts Genealogical Society, Somerset street, Boston. If the origi-

nal manuscripts are in existence, no doubt they throw much light on the schools at this time. In his abstract the compiler says: "There was evidently a large recess in the duties of Mr. Calley as schoolmaster, and that may account for his occasional neglect of orthography; that detracts, however, but little from the merits of his work. He was otherwise apparently a cabinet-maker."

Wyman's invaluable work also mentions a John Hills, teacher, son of Thomas Hills, of Malden; graduate of Harvard in 1772; married Elizabeth Kettell in 1774; and died January, 1787, leaving four daughters. Perhaps he did not teach in Charlestown, for I find no mention of him on the town records.

May 5, 1777, the town voted "to fix up the block house for a schoolhouse." If there was no building suitable for housing the school after the battle of Bunker Hill, the query rises, what was done with it during these two years? By the next May (1778) the town had so recovered from the shock of war that £140 was appropriated for schools, and the annual sums voted for 1779 and 1780 were £500 and £400, respectively. In December of the last-named year—how impossible is it for us to cope with these figures!—the books show that £6,400 were apportioned among the schools, £3,651 19s. to the one within, and the balance to the three beyond the peninsula! This estimate, of course, is in the inflated currency of the period. The salary of Timothy Trumbull, who was the teacher that year, is put down as £1,300. To get some idea of values, we read that Peter Tufts, in 1781, for twenty days spent for the town as an assessor, was voted £403 2s. The next year, for eighteen days of similar service, he received £4 16s.

From time to time the town clerk serves up for us items of repairs, as, February 5, 1781, to John Turner, £30 for work at the schoolhouse. October 17, 1782, the town warrant calls for a new school building, but it does not seem to materialize. Instead, John Edmands is hired to work on the old house, and gets his pay February 3, 1783. Later that month it is proposed to remove the meeting-house from the hill and set it somewhere for a school building. Isaac Mallet, Peter Tufts, Timothy Tufts,

David Wood, Jr., and Eliphalet Newell are made a committee to select a site, and it is decided "where the old schoolhouse stood is the most suitable place to put the present Meeting-house on." It is voted to move it. September 1, 1783, Mr. Mallet and Mr. Hays are a committee to see what repairs are necessary for the schoolhouse. The next January Deacon Frothingham receives thirty-six shillings for building the school chimney. October 25, 1784, the selectmen are given power to cut off from the present schoolhouse what is an encroachment on the street, and make of it an engine house, also to fix the other part for a new schoolhouse as soon as possible; and November 1 John Hay and Henry P. Sweetser are appointed to fix the old meeting-house for a school.

"Voted, 6 March, 1786, to have a grammar (Latin) schoolmaster in this town." (Query: Had there been no school of this rank since the days of Seth Sweetser?) Mr. H. P. Sweetser was added to the committee to see about a grammar master.

June 19, 1786. "It is voted to sell the old schoolhouse, which is not worth repairing, and build a new one, and to raise £100 to build it. Mr. Harris, Samuel Swan, Jr., and H. P. Sweetser, are a committee to build the school, and sell the old one to Captain Calder, and to set the school on Town Hill." July 17 this committee is enjoined to go about their work immediately. Captain Calder is to have the old house for £10, lawful money, as it now stands, "and two or three days to give his answer." August 7 it is voted to reconsider the former vote in regard to building a new schoolhouse, and give directions to the committee to put the old one in repair. As this committee desired to be excused, David Wood, Jr., Captain Cordis, and Samuel Henley, Esq., were chosen in their places. These are all the items I find on the subject, and I must confess my mind is in some doubt as to what were the exact school accommodations on the peninsula after the Revolution.

Timothy Trumbull was town clerk and schoolmaster, 1780-'82. The account of him in Wyman would seem to need verification. He was the son of James and Phebe (Johnson) Trumbull, and was born in 1754. At one time he was living in

Andover, where he married (1778) Frances, daughter of Joseph Phipps. Wyman makes brief mention of three children, but does not allude to his son John, of Norwich, whom I find referred to on the selectmen's books. Evidently Mr. Trumbull fell ill in 1782, when his family was not with him, for Jonathan Bradshaw received out of the rent for the school lot £3 8s. 7d. for boarding him four weeks and four days. In their anxiety, the selectmen sent a messenger, Mr. Wyeth, to Norwich to confer with the son about boarding his father "for the ensuing winter. As no convenient place amongst us can be found, if you will take him and provide, the selectmen will see to it that you are paid." But the worthy town fathers were relieved of their responsibility in a different way, for November 4, 1782, we read: "It is voted to pay Frances Trumbull £15 for her late husband, Timothy Trumbull, keeping school; and the next February there is a balance of a few more pounds to her account." Administration on Mr. Trumbull's estate was granted D. Wood November 7, 1783, and the inventory amounted to £140.

Another entry showing the philanthropic spirit of the times is not entirely foreign to this paper. "Voted, November 2, 1789, that Ruth Jones be put to school to some person who will prepare her for a schoolmistress at as cheap rate as can be!"

The next teacher was Samuel Holbrook, who also succeeded to the worthy position of town clerk. Like his predecessors, he received the annual compensation of £10 for this office. He must have served in both capacities for a period of nearly five years, but Wyman omits all mention of him. We have consulted the printed genealogy of the Holbrook family, but are unable to place him. His salary of £100 as schoolmaster was soon increased to £110. The town seems to have been behindhand in paying him for his services, but July 29, 1786, he received an order from the town treasurer for the balance due him to the twenty-fifth, being an amount nearly equal to two years' salary. March 5, 1787, Mr. Holbrook retires as town clerk, and is given a vote of thanks. The next May we find Samuel Payson serving as town clerk and schoolmaster, with the usual compensation for both. His term of office extended well into the next decade.

The annual appropriations, over and above the school funds, for all expenses, both within and without the Neck, gradually increased from £100 in 1781 to £185 in 1786. After that, until 1790, the amount fell off to £150. About this time the books show that the town had some difficulty in meeting its bills, and, like other communities, was engaged in various lottery schemes for some years. In 1790, and long before, the warrant for town meeting names the schoolhouse within the Neck as the voting place.

As for the school fund during all the years which we have been considering, it seems well to close with the following extracts:—

"July 27, 1762. Agreed that Peter Tufts, Jr., improve the school lot belonging to this town now in his possession, for the same rent as before, viz., £3 4s., 1. m., per annum for six years."

"February 6, 1769. Voted that the school lot be set up at vendue. February 27 it was leased out to the highest bidder, who proved to be Daniel Cutter, of Medford, for five years, at £7 17s. 4d. per annum."

"February 14, 1774. Mr. Peter Tufts, Jr., hires the town farm at Stoneham for seven years."

"March 7, 1783. Jack Symmes is allowed to have the school lot one year for £5 6s. 8d."

"Voted, March 1, 1784, to send letters to Joseph and Nathan Adams, who now improve the town farms, that they will be let next Monday at 3 P. M. at Mr. Whittemore's. Finally, agreed with Silas Symons to improve the town farm at Stoneham, lately improved by Captain Adams, for the next five years."

Whether the school lot and the town farm or farms were the same or not, we shall endeavor to show in another chapter that such extracts have a bearing on the important change in school methods adopted by the town of Charlestown soon after 1790.

[To be continued.]

QUINCY ADAMS VINAL

By Charles D. Elliot

Quincy Adams Vinal, who was a member of the Somerville Historical Society, and one of the most prominent citizens of Somerville, was born here on September 23, 1826, in the house which formerly stood on or near the site of Hotel Warren. He was son of Deacon Robert Vinal, formerly of Scituate, and Lydia (Stone) Vinal. His father came to Somerville, then Charlestown, in 1824; he was one of a family of five sons and six daughters; he was educated in the old "Milk Row" primary school, then standing within the limits of the present cemetery, in the old Medford-street school, and in the Hopkins Classical school of Cambridge, then one of the foremost preparatory schools for Harvard College.

After leaving school, he was employed in his father's grain store in Boston until 1848, when he became associated with his brother, Robert A. Vinal, in the same business on Lewis' wharf, which partnership lasted for fifteen years, or until the retirement of his brother, he continuing in the grain trade until 1876, when he also retired. Since then, however, he has been actively engaged in important business enterprises, holding many offices of trust.

He was the first president of the Somerville National Bank, holding the office until 1894; director in the Cambridge Gas Light Company for several years, and its president from April, 1897, until his death. He was also for some time director in the Charlestown Gas Company. He was a charter member of the Boston Chamber of Commerce, and, until its settlement, trustee of the estate of the late Charles Tufts, the founder of Tufts College; he was also a trustee of other estates.

His sterling integrity was recognized by his fellow-citizens, and for many years he held important public offices in the town and city, being at various times member of the board of assessors, committee on public library, trustee of the Somerville hospital, and member of the fire department.

He was a member of the Legislature in 1873, 1881, and 1882, of the common council in 1875 and 1876, and alderman in 1883,

holding membership in the park, highway, and other important committees of the city government.

On October 26, 1853, Mr. Vinal was married to Miss Augusta Smith Peirce, daughter of John and Sarah Peirce, of Chelsea, now Revere, and great-granddaughter of Captain John Parker, one of the heroes of the battle of Lexington, and grandfather of Rev. Theodore Parker. Two memorials of Captain Parker have been preserved in the Massachusetts state house, one, the first firearm captured in the Revolution, the other, the gun carried by Captain Parker at the battle of Lexington.

On the fiftieth anniversary of their marriage, October 26, 1903, the golden wedding of Mr. and Mrs. Vinal was celebrated at their home on Aldersey street, upon which occasion they received the congratulations and good wishes of many hundred friends and guests.

Mr. Vinal died on July 14, 1904, at the age of seventy-seven years. A widow and seven daughters survive him, viz.: Miss Anna Parker Vinal, a member of this society, Miss Mary Lowell Vinal, Miss Martha Adams Vinal, Miss Josephine Vinal, Mrs. Sarah A. (Vinal) Keene, Miss Leonora Vinal, and Miss Leslie T. Vinal.

Mr. Vinal in religion was a Unitarian, and a member of the First Unitarian Society. In politics he was a Republican. He was a man of strong convictions and unimpeachable character; successful in his business career and as a public official. He loved his native town and city, and his memory was stored with reminiscences of its history. An interesting paper by him recalling events of former times, and entitled "Neighborhood Sketches," was read on January 8, 1903, before this society. Mr. Vinal was amiable in his relations with others, and a man with innumerable friends, and in whom friends could place the most implicit confidence. He was one of the few men who were born and lived their entire lives in our city. As a prominent citizen of Somerville, whom here we shall meet no more, his memory will be recalled with feelings of the greatest respect.

October 3, 1904.

Somerville Historical Society

Season of 1904-1905

October 3 — Business Meeting.

*November 2 — From the Stage Coach to the Parlor Car; or,
The Romance of the Railroad in Massachusetts.

CHARLES E. MANN, Malden.

November 16 — Old Somerville and "Charlestown End."

GEORGE Y. WELLINGTON,

President Arlington Historical Society.

December 5 — Business Meeting.

*December 7 — Incidents in a Long Life in the Public Service.

JAIRUS MANN.

December 21 — The Beginnings of the Boston and Lowell
Railroad.

FRANK E. MERRILL.

*January 4 — An Evening with

EDWIN DAY SIBLEY.

January 18 — Concerning Some Neighboring Historical Societies.

DAVID H. BROWN,

President Medford Historical Society.

EUGENE TAPPAN,

Secretary Sharon Historical Society.

*February 1 — Neighborhood Sketch.— In and About Union
Square, No. 2.

CHARLES D. ELLIOT.

February 6 — Business Meeting.

February 15 — Boston in the Civil War — Chiefly from a Naval
View Point.

*March 1 — The Flora of Somerville.

LOUISE A. VINAL.

March 15 — Some Peculiarities of Our Ancestors.

D. P. COREY,

President Malden Historical Society.

April 3 — Annual Meeting.

*Light refreshments will be served.

Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

January, 1905

Vol. III

No. 4



CONTENTS.

	PAGE
SAMUEL TUFTS HOUSE	Frontispiece
GREGORY STONE AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS	Sara A. Stone 73
THE SCHOOLS OF CHARLESTOWN BEYOND THE NECK, with frontispiece (continued)	Frank Mortimer Hawes 87
INDEX	94

HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee

PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio*

SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



SAMUEL TUFTS HOUSE. GEN. GREENE'S HEADQUARTERS.
See page 92.

HISTORIC LEAVES

VOL. III.

JANUARY, 1905

No. 4

GREGORY STONE AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS

By Sara A. Stone

Gregory Stone, and Simon, his elder brother, came to this country with their families from England in 1635. Their English ancestry has been traced with probable accuracy back to one Symond Stone, who lived in Much Bromley, Essex County. His will was probated in 1510, and is now in possession of the British Museum. Simon and Gregory were great-great-grandsons of this Symond, and the record of their baptisms has been found in the church register of Much Bromley, February 9, 1585-6, and April 19, 1592, respectively. The marriage of Simon to Joan Clark in 1616 is also there; but the marriage of Gregory to Margaret Garrad has been found in the parish register at Nayland, Suffolk County. There are also records of the birth of four children, and the burial of the mother and youngest within two days of each other.

Gregory married for his second wife the widow Lydia Cooper, who already had two children by her former husband. The births of three more children are recorded at Nayland. With this family of eight children, the oldest seventeen, the youngest three years, he crossed the water. Paige, in his History of Cambridge, thinks it probable that he came in the ship Defence, from London, with the Rev. Thomas Shepherd, and some others. This company, fleeing religious intolerance at home, embarked in the early days of July, 1635, in a ship having "a bottom too decayed and feeble indeed for such a voyage, so that a perilous leak endangered her safety on the way hither."

Simon Stone came with his family on the ship Increase, also from London, and settled in Watertown, where he and his descendants for several generations took a prominent part in the affairs of the locality. He was a grantee of eight lots, and later was one of the largest land owners in the town. A considerable

part of the land now occupied by Mt. Auburn and Cambridge cemeteries once belonged to him. According to tradition it was he who built the old-fashioned house of colonial style, that, with the extensive buildings connected with it, served six generations of his descendants for two hundred years, till it was destroyed by fire.

In the beginning, Watertown included a tract which now is divided into Waltham, Weston, and the largest part of Lincoln, and that part of Cambridge lying east of Mt. Auburn Cemetery, between Fresh Pond and Charles River, though these tracts were probably not inhabited, and even Watertown proper being but sparsely sprinkled with houses. Charlestown had already been settled, and Cambridge, then called "Newe Towne," seems to have been "designed merely as a fortified place, very small in extent, and apparently without definite bounds." The dividing line between Charlestown and Cambridge was established in 1632-3, and was substantially the same as that which now divides Cambridge from Somerville.

A grant by the court in March, 1635-6, agreed that "Newe Towne" bounds "shall run eight miles into the country from their meeting-house." This grant secured to Cambridge, on its northern border, the territory now embraced in Arlington, and the principal part of Lexington. The reason for this extension was that a restless spirit seemed to pervade the inhabitants, due to several causes. Their large herds of cattle demanded more room than was available. There were two clergymen having great influence and large following, one of whom, Mr. Hooker, deemed it wise to withdraw to some place more remote from Boston, leaving Mr. Cotton a clear field in Newe Towne. There were also political rivalries.

This was the state of affairs when the ship *Defence* arrived in October, 1635. Mr. Hooker tried to induce some of this company to go with him to Connecticut, where he proposed to establish a settlement, and did succeed in doing so. But Gregory Stone decided to remain in Cambridge, probably being only too glad to reach terra firma, after the long and arduous voyage. If he had gone on to Connecticut, the lives of many people, his

descendants, would have been different, and this story, perhaps, would not have been written.

It is presumed that he settled first in Watertown, as he had large grants of land there, which he afterward sold. The first incident of note after his arrival must have been the establishment of the "first church gathering" in Newe Towne, destined to become the first parish in Cambridge, now, as then, located in Harvard Square. A quaint historian says the people were probably summoned to the gathering by the roll of a drum, and could be seen coming from all quarters. When the list of the church members was written years later, Gregory Stone and all his family were members in full communion; all his children had been baptized there. It is not known just when he joined, but it must have been in the early days, as he was made a freeman in May, 1636. The conditions of this privilege, which was earnestly desired by every man, were, "to be orthodox members of the church, twenty years old, and worth £200."

As part of the unrest of this time, there was moving to and fro between Watertown and Newe Towne, and Gregory Stone was one of those who moved to Newe Towne in 1637. He bought a house and five acres of land of Roger Harlackenden, Esq. By the boundaries given, this homestead or "homestall," must have been in the neighborhood of the Cambridge Observatory and Botanic Gardens.

By purchase and grants in later years he became a large land-holder. In 1638 he was Representative for Cambridge. In the meantime there was work to do in the laying out of Newe Towne, which, by order of the General Court in 1636, was called Cambridge, and providing for its government. The records are full of these transactions, with the regulations accompanying each.

For example, "Severall lotts granted by the Towne for wood lots unto divers perfons, But the land to ly in Comon for ye townes use."

"And the other fide Menotime Bridge, Gregory Stone, 13 acres."

"Gregory Stone hath liberty to fell some timber on the Comon for his fence against the Comon."

"At a Gen all meeting of the Inhabitants the 8th mo. 1652.

"The Towne do choofe mr Richard Champney, Gregory Stone, Tho: Marret, Ri: Jackfon, and Gilbert Cracbone to draw up instructions ffor the Townfmen, and prefont the fame to the Towne 4th, 10th. 52. to be allowed or diflowed by a Generall Vote of the Towne then met."

There seems to have been some question "whether or Cow Common were already lawfully stinted," so serious as to require an audience before the magistrate of the county. Gregory Stone was one of a committee which should present "ye true state of ye buifsiiness before them."

Later, there was a fence to be erected on the Watertown line, and he was one of a committee of seven to "confider & determine, the ordering, making & maintaining of that fence."

People on the south side of the river, finding it a long distance to go to church in Cambridge, petitioned from time to time to be set off as a separate precinct. A committee was appointed, of which Gregory Stone was one, "to treat with or Brethren & Neighbors on the fouth side the River & to ifsue the matter with them according to the above propoficcon made & agreed by the Towne."

Gregory Stone was by this time called "Deacon" in all the records, and his name appears on nearly every important committee, from that which was appointed to thin out the wood lots, to one commissioned to present before the General Court a protest against the arbitrary government of a Council or Parliament in which they were not represented, this being contrary to the intent of their first patent, as they interpreted it, at the same time avowing their personal loyalty to the King. Here was the first whispering of the spirit which, more than a hundred years later, was heard in full tones in the Declaration of Independence.

At a special session, commencing October 19, 1664,—*"The Court being met together and informed that several persons, inhabitants of Cambridge, were at the door and desiring liberty to make known their errand, were called in, and Mr. Edward Jackson, Mr. Richard Jackson, Mr. Edward Oakes, and Deacon Stone, coming before the Court, presented a petition from the*

inhabitants of Cambridge which was subscribed by very many hands, in which they testified and declared their good content and satisfaction they took and had in the present government in church and commonwealth, with their resolution to be assisting to and encouraging the same, and humbly desiring all means might be used for the continuance and preservation thereof:—

"To the honoured Generall Court of Massachusetts Colonie. The humble representation of the inhabitants of the towne of Cambridge.

"For as much as we have heard that there have beene representations made unto his Majesty concerning divisions among us and dissatisfaction about the present government of this colonie; we whose names are under written, the inhabitants and house holders of the towne above mentioned, doe hearby testify our unanimous satisfaction in and adhearing to the present government so long and orderly established, and our earnest desire of the continuance theirow and of all the liberties and privileges pertaining theirow to which are contained in the charter granted by King James and King Charles the First of famous memory, under the encouragedment and security of which charter we or our fathers ventured over the ocean into this wildenesse through great hazards, charges, and difficulties; and we humbly desire our honored General Court would addresse themselves by humble petition to his Maiesty for his royall favour in the continuance of the present establishment and of all privileges theirow, and that we may not be subjected to the arbitrary power of any who are not chosen by this people according to their patent. Cambridge the 17th of the 8. 1664."

Similar petitions were sent in from neighboring towns the next day.

Among the names signed to this petition were those of Gregory Stone and David and Samuel Stone, his sons. By this it would seem that two at least of Gregory Stone's sons had followed their father's footsteps.

In 1647, he had received a grant of 200 acres, more or less, abutting "uppon the Heade of the 8 mile line toward Concord." In this locality many had now settled, and his sons on their mar-

riage became influential members of this community, which was called "The Farms."

Perhaps here might be interposed a brief record of the children of Gregory Stone, other than Samuel, in whom we are chiefly interested.

John, the oldest, settled in that part of Sudbury which is now Framingham, but in the latter part of his life came back to Cambridge, occupying the homestead after the death of his father, in 1672, carrying out a wish expressed in the latter's will. He was deacon of the church at Sudbury, and was employed by the town in civil affairs. He was Representative for Cambridge in 1682 and 1683. He was elected ruling elder of the church at Cambridge in 1682, but held the office for a short time only, as he died the next year. The stone which marks his burial place may be found in the old cemetery at Harvard Square.

Daniel, the second son, was a "Chirurgion," and resided in Cambridge and Boston.

David, the third, did not hold any important office, but apparently was well known in the precinct of "The Farms," as his son Samuel sometimes signed his name. Samuel Stone, "David's Son."

There were two daughters, Elizabeth, who settled in Ipswich, and Sarah, who married Joseph Merriam and lived at Concord.

John Cooper, the son of Gregory Stone's second wife, by her first husband, became a prominent citizen of Cambridge. He was selectman thirty-eight years, town clerk thirteen years, and deacon of the church twenty-three years.

His sister, Lydia, married David Fiske, and resided part of the time on Linnaean Street, Cambridge, and afterwards at "The Farms," where he was one of the most prominent men. He was a wheelwright, but much employed in public service, especially as a surveyor of lands. He was selectman in 1688, Representative in the critical period of 1689. At "The Farms" he was precinct clerk and assessor; the first subscriber for a meeting-house there, and the first named member of the church.

In tracing the career of Gregory Stone, as found in the

records, one comes upon the same names again and again. Comparison with the list of those who, it was presumed, came in the ship *Defence* at the same time as he, shows that they were fellow-workers in the upbuilding of the infant settlement. In 1647, on the death of one of these, Nathaniel Sparohauke, father of John Cooper's wife, he was appointed appraiser of part of his estate. He was one of the executors of the will of his brother Simon, who died in 1665.

At the beginning of the year 1668 there is recorded an order of the selectmen for the "cattichifing of the youth of the town." Deacon Stone, and Deacon Chefholme were appointed to perform that office for the youth at "The Farms." Two years later a similar order is recorded, with Edward Oakes as his associate. Another item says: "Deacon Stone & Deacon Cooper for those fam. on the west side of the Common, and for Watertown lane, as far towards the town as Samuel Hastings'."

At this time he was on a committee for dividing the common lands on the south side of the river in the precinct which I presume is now Brighton; there also seems to have been a tract which for some reason reverted to the town, and a committee was appointed to settle the damages. In nearly all work of this kind, requiring good judgment and impartial decision, he had a part.

Two curious items in the church records show that Deacon Stone was called on to take charge of the arrangements and pay the expenses of certain funerals. They are as follows:—

"March 16, 1668-9. To Deacon Stone by a pair of Shooes and a pound of suger, because the deacon had silver though they cost him 4s 6d had 3s 6d

"February 4, 1670. Payd in silver, by the apoyntment of the committee for the mynister house unto the deputie governor Mr Francis Willoughby, by Deacon Stone and Thomas Chesholm, as appears by his discharge wch Deacon Stone hath, for the dischong of Mr. Mitchell's funerall the sum of 8 pounds, 13 shillings, 6 pence. I say the sum of £8 13s 6d"

Mr. Mitchell had served the parish long and faithfully as its minister.

The last committee upon which Gregory Stone served was one which was to have charge of building a stone fence four feet high, with two gates, on the line between Watertown and Cambridge. There is reason to think that this work was never carried out on the part of the committee.

On November 30, 1672, Gregory Stone died at the age of eighty years. He was "the last survivor" of the original members of the "first church gathering" at Cambridge. He had been its deacon for at least fourteen years, and in all probability for twice that length of time.

Ten days before his death he made his will, expressing in clear and definite terms his wishes as to the disposal of his effects. The will has been printed in the *New England Historic-Genealogical Register*, volume 8, page 69, and is one of the very few papers left by him which the worms and teeth of time have not devoured, and which lies at the foundation of the genealogy of his race. The opening paragraph is worthy of full quotation:—

"In the name of God-Amen. I, Gregory Stone of Cambridge in New England, being through the Lord's favor of sound judgment and memory, do make and ordeine my last will & Testamt in manner following. viz.: my immortall soul I do freely resigne into the armes and mercyes of God my Maker, Jesus Christ my only redeemer, and to the holy spirit, to carry mee on & lead mee forever, my body to be decently interred at the discricon of my Xian friends."

For some unknown reason, out of the twelve or more known grandchildren, he singled out one, to whom he gave by special bequest "my little cow called mode and my little young colt, or five pounds, provided he live with my wife one year after my decease, & do her faithful service according to his best ability, during which time my wife shall find him his meat, drink, and cloathing, & at the end of the year deliver him the above-named cow and colt." His sons John and Samuel were appointed executors. To his wife's children, John and Lydia Cooper, were given ten pounds each, and Lydia's daughter, whom he called his grandchild, was given two acres of land.

Judging from the inventory, the house he left was a commodious one for the time. The inventory mentions a parlor and hall, with chambers over both, but the contents of all are of miscellaneous description. A few of the items will give some idea of the price of different articles:—

	£	s	d
A tann coatt.....	00	12	00
A gray Jackit	00	05	00
A red wastcoatt	00	01	06
A man's hoode	00	01	06
A payrr of moofe leather gloves	00	02	00
A feather bed, bolfter, and two pillowes.....	02	13	00
A payrr of sheets	00	03	00
Two blankits	00	12	00
A coverlit	00	16	00
A payrr of Cotton sheets	00	15	00
A warming pan	00	07	00
A bible	00	04	00
pfalme booke	00	01	00
Three printed books	00	02	00
17 pewter difhes great & small.....	02	00	00
Three pewter pots and a beaker	00	09	00
16 spoons	00	02	06
Two pewter candlesticks	00	03	00
A fowling piece	01	00	00
fine table cloth & towolls.....	01	02	00
A table and forms.....	00	07	00
A table and two forms.....	01	04	00
Three bedsteds	00	09	00
12 Busholls of Apples.....	00	12	00
beefe tallow, a butter tub and lanthorn.....	00	07	00
A gray mare and colt.....	03	00	00
A young cow.....	03	00	00
Two oxen	11	00	00

It would seem by this list that cotton sheets and pewter ware were among the high-priced articles of household furniture, probably because they were imported articles. We wonder what kind

of a bedstead could be worth only three shillings. It will be noted that forms are mentioned instead of chairs. Bed furnishings and wearing apparel were abundant, but held at a low valuation.

In the old cemetery at Harvard Square, a foot stone, marked G. S., shows the last resting place of Gregory Stone. A few years ago a descendant erected a granite monument near it, with suitable inscription.

Deacon Samuel Stone

Samuel, the only son of Gregory Stone by his second wife, was baptized on February 4, 1630, in the church at Nayland, Suffolk County, England. He was five years old when the family came to this country. His education must have been obtained in the schools of the time. Possibly he went to the "faire Grammer School," the first one established in the settlement, taught by Elijah Corlet, a school which prepared students for Harvard College, and which was situated near the spreading chestnut tree, celebrated in Longfellow's poem.

He was married on June 7, 1655, to Sarah Stearns, of Watertown, and located at "The Farms." He was made freeman in 1657. He became a prosperous farmer and land-holder, and his name frequently appears on the records for various services.

For the first and almost the only time the name of Stone is found among those fined for "felling and froying timb on ye comon lands," in the record of a meeting of the selectmen, held in 1660. This was not an unusual misdemeanor in those days.

In 1663-4-7 he was appointed surveyor of highways. In 1669 he was one of a committee to run the bounds between Concord and Cambridge. In 1673 he was appointed constable, an office somewhat similar to that of townsman or selectman. Later he was commissioned "to looke after the Common fencis for the farmes neere Concord."

Upon complaint made by him and Joseph Merriam, his brother-in-law, "of the low and pore Condifhlon of John Johnson, the selectmen doe regeft Samuella Stone and Joseph Merriam to take care for his fuply for his present nefefitye, and to be fupplied

out of the town rate from the Constable Ifack Stones, not exceeding fourty shillings untill further order be taken."

In 1681 he was appointed selectman, and also in 1688 and 1692; the selectmen then performed the duty of assessors, until 1697, except in the year 1694. He was also appointed on a committee to make a "rate for the ministry" in 1683 and 1691, and was chosen Commissioner in 1693 and 1695.

The following quotation from a report of a committee appointed to lay out the bounds of a meadow of eighty acres, more or less, not far from the Concord bounds, is interesting from the curious spelling: "this is by us marked Rounde that meadow where it is next the Comon with this mark ^M with A markin oyrn on that side of many trees nex the meadow, the proprietors being with us and consenting to what we have done.

"famuell ftone, fenr,

"david fifke, fenr,

"Mathew bredge, fenr."

He served on a committee which was appointed to "devide the lands conteyned betwixt oburne Concord and our head line," and "alsoe to leave Convenient high ways of two rod wide between the divifions or Squadrents where need requires for a high way."

An order of the Court establishing what was called a "single rate" was passed in November, 1646, the rate to be one penny for every twenty shillings estate. In the list of persons and estates taken in August, 1688, the name of Samuel Stone, Sr., is given as paying the highest tax, showing that he was a man of large landed property. In these days of high rates of taxation the sum of 11s 9d seems absurdly small, however.

Meanwhile the inhabitants of "The Farms," finding it difficult to perform their religious duties, which no "right New England man" thought of shirking, living, as some of them did, ten miles from the meeting-house, petitioned to be set off as a separate precinct. Cambridge was so much opposed that the petition was not granted; nor was a second appeal two years later. But "The Farmers," feeling the justice of their cause, persevered, and in 1691 were given permission to establish a church, though they remained a part of Cambridge in civil affairs until 1713.

Samuel Stone was prominent in this new venture, being one of the signers of the petition to the General Court, on the committee to engage the preacher, and one of the first deacons. The funds for building the meeting-house were raised by subscription, and the paper is the oldest upon the records, and is prized accordingly, bearing, as it does, the names of the principal inhabitants of the precinct at a critical time in its history. It is needless to say that Samuel Stone's name is among the foremost, people in those days giving according to their means. The same is true of the tax for the payment of the minister's salary. The next year a piece of land was bought for the "benefit of the ministry," and it was paid for by the same means.

It was the custom of the time to invite the magistrates to be present at such important occasions as the organization of a new church. The event at "The Farms" was no exception, and combined the ordination of the minister with the signing of the covenant by the members. Judge Sewall was one of the invited guests, and in his journal, after a description of the exercises, adds, "Mr. Stone and Mr. Fiske thanked me for my assistance there." David Fiske was chosen clerk, and Samuel Stone deacon. The two were the first to sign the covenant, being among the ten men dismissed from churches in Cambridge, Watertown, Woburn, and Concord to enter into the work. The names of a son of each are also found in the list, and their wives were admitted later. Deacon Stone had been a member of the church at Cambridge, and all his children had been baptized there.

The minister chosen served less than a year, and a meeting was called to consider a new supply. The Rev. John Hancock was their choice, and the senior deacon and the clerk were appointed "to treat with him."

While the affairs of the church were proceeding so satisfactorily, civil affairs were also progressing. The settlement had come to be called "Cambridge Farms," and in the year 1694, by the order of the Treasurer of the Province, a board of assessors was chosen to perform the duties which had previously been attended to by the selectmen. Samuel Stone was one of these, and was appointed again in 1695 and 1697.

Early in the new century the question of the bounds between Cambridge and Watertown seems not to have been settled, or, at least, the marks and monuments needing to be renewed, a committee was appointed in each town to attend to the matter. Samuel Stone was one of the committee from Cambridge.

At a town meeting held in April, 1711, the people voted to buy a piece of land near the meeting-house for a public common, the same to be paid for by subscription. The names of several Stones appear on this list.

Samuel Stone was twice married; his first wife died in 1700, and his second survived him thirteen years. He died at the age of eighty-five, September 27, 1715. "In ye old burying ground" in Lexington, on the circular drive at the southern end, is a row of twelve slate stones, bearing the name of Stone. The first is that of Samuel Stone, Sr., the second that of his first wife.

Samuel Stone, West

Samuel Stone, the oldest son of Deacon Samuel Stone, was born at Cambridge Farms October 1, 1656. On account of duplicate names in the family, to avoid confusion, he was designated Samuel Stone, West, to distinguish him from his cousin, David Stone's son, who was called Samuel Stone, East.

He married Dorcas Jones, of Concord, June 12, 1679. He probably resided in what is now Lincoln, somewhat nearer the church at Concord than the one at Cambridge, for the births of all his children are recorded there. He was taxed, however, in Cambridge, as his name is on the tax list of 1688. He was freeman in 1682. He took a prominent part in the establishment of the church at "The Farms" in 1691 and later, being one of the signers of the first covenant, as has been related. In 1698 his wife was admitted to the church from Concord, and from that time their interests seem to have been wholly in the town of Lexington, as it was called by order of the Court, in 1713.

According to an (unofficial) estimate of the population, it had increased from forty-five to over 500 in the sixty years between 1655 and 1715, so that it is not remarkable that he should be interested in and take a prominent part in the affairs of the town which had grown with his growth.

A grandchild of one of the early settlers in Lexington says: "The old patriarch has often related with tears in his eyes the poverty and destitution experienced, the hardships borne, and the trials endured by the first inhabitants of the place. Their dwellings were small and rude—the same room serving the various purposes of kitchen and parlor, dining-room and bedroom, storehouse and workshop. Their furniture was of the most primitive kind; blocks or forms made of split logs furnished seats, wooden spoons, made with a knife, enabled them to eat their bread and milk, or bean porridge, out of rude bowls or troughs, cut with an axe from blocks of wood." The terror from Indians must have been even worse. It is related that, after a massacre by the Indians at Framingham, during King Philip's War, a little girl was taken away to Canada, but was afterward rescued and brought back. The tales she could picture to her daughter, who figures in this narrative later on, can best be left to the imagination.

On the death of Samuel Stone's father, Deacon Stone, in 1715, he was appointed deacon to fill the vacancy. He also succeeded his father in the homestead. He was selectman in 1714, 1715, and 1723. In 1735 there were twenty-five slaves in town, in most cases kept as house servants. It is said that Deacon Stone had one. His long life of eighty-seven years was brought to a close June 17, 1743. In the row of slate stones in "ye Old Burying Ground," his is the eleventh, or the second from the further end; and that of his wife, who died three years later, has been placed beside it. This couple lived together sixty-four years.

THE SCHOOLS OF CHARLESTOWN BEYOND THE NECK — REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD

Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

Our account of the "school" beyond Charlestown Neck has been brought down to 1754. The object of this paper will be to continue its history to 1793.

After the bounds of Medford were definitely established, there were left three school districts, which we, not the records, have chosen to call the Milk Row, the Alewife Brook, and the Gardner Row. The first of these embraced nearly the whole of what is now Somerville; the second may be said to have extended from the Old Powder House well up into Arlington; the third lay wholly in that town and along by the Mystic ponds. As we have indicated, the town books afford very meagre information, and we are forced to content ourselves, for the most part, with a list of the local committee for each year, and the sums of money appropriated.

From 1754 to 1765, a period of eleven years, the amount voted in town meeting for these outside districts was £180, or £24, l. m. In the last-mentioned year a readjustment of the taxes increased this appropriation to £34, l. m., and it remained at this sum until 1775. As was stated in our last chapter, no money seems to have been raised by taxation for school purposes that year. Evidently the schools on the peninsula were both closed for a time, but from a perusal of the selectmen's books we conclude that the three schools which we are considering were continued without any marked interruption, for the local committee ceased not to disburse sums received from the town treasurer, sums varying, to be sure, from year to year, but which by 1781 had returned somewhat to the old basis of things. From that time the appropriation slowly increased, until the sum for outside educational purposes amounted in 1792 to £80.

The management of all the schools was nominally in the hands of the selectmen, but for many years previous to 1754 a local committee was annually appointed, to attend to all matters

pertaining to these outside schools, such as furnishing wood for the winter fire, making repairs, hiring and paying the teachers.

For nineteen years, from 1752 to 1770, inclusive, the local committeeman for Milk Row was Samuel Kent, whose father, Joseph Kent, we have seen, held a similar position for some years before that. During this long period he disbursed, on an average, less than £12 yearly of the town's money for this school. Compared with the present outlay in the same district, this seems a mere trifle, but perhaps this man, for his faithfulness to public duties, is deserving of an enduring monument, such as the naming of a school building for himself and his family, full as much as some of our more modern worthies who have been thus honored.

The Kent family was long identified with the history of Charlestown. The grandfather of Samuel came here from Dedham in 1653, and left a good estate to his children. Ebenezer, a distant cousin of Samuel, was the ancestor of Hon. William H. Kent, one of the mayors of Charlestown. Joseph Kent died May 30, 1753, in his seventy-ninth year, and was the father of nine children. In his will there is mention of seventy-four acres at Winter Hill, bounded, east, by a rangeway: west, by Peter Tufts; etc. Besides several smaller parcels, he left to his son Samuel sixteen acres, bought of N. Hayward, near Winter Hill, and the use of twelve acres of wood. He bequeathed his negro Peggy to his daughter Mehitabel; Venus to his daughter Rebecca; Jenny to his son Benjamin; and Violet to his son Stephen. The will of his widow, probated 1762, mentions her negro girl Jane.

Samuel, the fifth child, born July 18, 1714, lived and died probably on what is now Somerville avenue. The family homestead is still standing above the Middlesex Bleachery, near Kent street. Mr. Kent was a blacksmith, and, like his father, held various town offices, including that of selectman. Wyman's invaluable work, to which we are indebted for much of our information, is wrong when it says that Mr. Kent was schoolmaster outside the Neck May 2, 1768. On that date the record merely states that he received an order for his proportion of the money for the said school. Probably he served in his capacity as com-

mitteeman until his death. His estate was administered by the widow, 1771. In the inventory, among other items, was a parcel of forty acres, bounded, south, by a range; east, by W. Tufts; north, by D. Wood; west, by Peter Tufts, John Pigeon, etc. With the house and shop went seven and one-half acres, bounded by the road on the northeast, and southwest by land of Samuel Tufts.

November 27, 1740, Samuel Kent married into a remarkable family, remarkable as far as Somerville history is concerned, among whose numerous descendants are many of the present day to rise up and call them blessed. Of the children of Joseph³ (Joseph², John¹) Adams, of Cambridge, Rebecca married Samuel Kent; Anne became the wife of Peter Tufts, Jr.; and Mary married Nathan Tufts, his brother. Two sons of Joseph Adams, through their children, figure in this history,—Thomas⁴ Adams being the father of Hannah, the wife of Walter Russell, to whom reference will be made in our next paper; and Joseph⁴ Adams (styled deacon), whose children contrive to confuse us still further with their marriages, for Anna became the wife of Timothy Tufts, another brother of Peter, Jr., and Hannah married Peter Tufts, the third; Nathan⁵ Adams took to wife Rebecca, the daughter of Peter, Jr., and Joseph⁵ Adams (styled major) married, for his first wife, Lucy, the daughter of our Samuel Kent. Samuel and Rebecca (Adams) Kent had seven children, some of whom died in infancy. Besides the above-mentioned Lucy, there was an "only son," Samuel, Jr., and daughters Sarah and Rebecca, who became the first and the second wife, respectively, of Nathaniel Hawkins.

The next to serve the Milk Row school was a prominent personage, in his day, in this part of Charlestown. He and the faithful partner of his toils are perhaps the best-known local figures of that eighteenth century time. We refer to Peter Tufts, Jr., and Anne Adams Tufts. He was elected to his office May 7, 1771, and continued therein two or three years. For an account of him the reader is referred to the admirable article on the Tufts family, by Dr. E. C. Booth, in Vol. I. of this magazine. A few additional dates may not be out of place. This worthy

couple were married April 19, 1750. Their graves may be seen in the old Phipps-street yard, Charlestown, where it is recorded that Mr. Tufts died March 4, 1791, aged sixty-three, and his widow, February 7, 1813, aged eighty-four. A list of their twelve children, with some of their descendants, may be found in Wyman's "History of Charlestown."

The next name to interest us is that of Stephen Miller. May 2, 1774, it was voted that he have an order for what he had expended for the school, £21 3s 4d; and April 18, 1776, we read: "Agreed with Stephen Miller, one of the committee for the school without the Neck, that he have an order for £34 10s 0d, the whole sum named for said school. But as Mr. Gardner's and Mr. Russell's orders were drawn (but not paid) and recorded in this book, this is deducted, and makes his payment £20 17s 4d." These amounts, then, represent what it cost the town of Charlestown to maintain the Milk Row school, at the time of the Revolution. It also shows us that, unlike the one on the peninsula, this school was not suspended, at least for any length of time, during the exciting scenes that followed the eventful April 19, 1775.

Stephen Miller represented one of the old families of Somerville. He was the son of James³ (James², Richard¹) Miller and Abigail Frost, and was born in 1718. He followed the blacksmith's trade, and died February, 1791, aged seventy-three. By his will, he left to the negroes of the town £20, and made generous provision for the widow and children of his brother James, besides remembering other relatives. This James Miller was slain on Somerville soil by the British on the day of the Lexington and Concord fight, and near the spot a tablet has been placed to commemorate the event.

From 1776 to 1793 Milk Row school was directed by three men, who in turn acted in the capacity of local committeeman, Timothy Tufts, Samuel Tufts, and Nathaniel Hawkins. Some time before 1776 we read that the citizens in town meeting assembled, for some reason or other, discontinued the practice of choosing a local superintendent, and voted that the selectmen should have sole charge of the school without the Neck, and full

powers "to proportion the money among the inhabitants as they shall judge equitable." Often, no doubt, these three gentlemen, without any special appointment, performed their school duties because they were members of the board of selectmen; and Stephen Miller may have served his constituents in consequence of such authority.

October 10, 1776, Timothy Tufts is first mentioned, when he received for the school under his care the sum of £22 13s 5d. May 8, 1780, the year of inflated values, the selectmen, with Samuel Gardner added, were made a committee to regulate all the schools, and the following December Mr. Tufts, as one of this body, received for his school the enormous sum of £1,771 2s 6d. In 1782 Mr. Tufts, selectman, was empowered to disburse for the Milk Row school £35 5s. And thus it was, with varying amounts, from that year to 1788. In November, 1790, he seems to have been appointed to this office for the last time. More than once, with Nathaniel Hawkins, he was empowered to make a division of the school money, and December, 1791, we read that he had an order on the town treasurer for £3 17s 6d, to furnish wood for the school under his care.

The name of Samuel Tufts does not occur very often in connection with school affairs. As town treasurer, he was thrown into close relations with the selectmen, and must have been intimately acquainted with the school in his own section. May 11, 1778, with Caleb Call, Samuel Gardner, and Philemon Russell, he was appointed to regulate the outside schools of the town. The following year this committee consisted of Samuel Tufts, Samuel Gardner, and Amos Warren. February, 1782, the school, under the direction of Samuel Tufts, received £29 10s to offset the expenses of the year before.

Nathaniel Hawkins, generally styled Collector Hawkins, as one of the selectmen, was acting for the schools as early as 1783. His first recorded service was in 1784, when he was appointed, with Esquire Tufts, to select teachers for the outside schools. January 2, 1786, he was put at the head of a committee of three "to collect the number of children, both male and female, in each of the three districts, between the ages of 5 and 16." This was

our first school census. It is much to be regretted that we have not the results of their investigations. We have already referred to Mr. Hawkins' services, in company with Mr. Tufts, in dividing the school money. To do this to the satisfaction of all concerned required men of tact. We have no reason to believe that these gentlemen were unsuccessful. June, 1788, Mr. Hawkins is first recorded as receiving his proportion of the town money for the school in his district. Again, January 5, 1789, he is one of a committee of five to divide the school money for the year preceding, according to the taxes, and Milk Row received £31 2s 8d. February 7, 1791, the same amount was disbursed by him; in 1792, £38; in February, 1793, £41. These sums are each for the year preceding. As Mr. Hawkins continued his services into the next period of our school history, we will leave further mention of him for some future chapter.

Samuel Tufts, like his brothers Peter, Nathan, and Timothy, found a helpmate among the Adamses, of Cambridge, but Martha Adams, his wife, was not, I believe, a daughter of Joseph Adams. Our interest in Samuel Tufts to-day centres chiefly in the old homestead on Somerville avenue, where his father dwelt before him. Here he lived out a useful life of ninety-one (91) years, and died in 1828. Dr. Booth, in the article before mentioned, gives us a delightful picture of the old gentleman—tall, white-haired, and rather stern—as he used to sit sunning himself on his porch as the children from the old schoolhouse at the corner of the burying ground would come to his house for water. This house, now marked with its historic tablet, we are told, is the oldest building in our city. Long may it be spared for its venerable associations!

We can see these brothers, fair types of the generation which they represented, as they rode to Charlestown and back, often late at night, summer and winter, in their faithful attendance to public duties. Timothy, who died in 1805, seems to have gained the more distinction, and no doubt the title of "Squire" became him well. That he was regarded with some familiarity, in spite of the dignity of his office, we gather from the fact that the town books not unfrequently speak of him as "Timy" Tufts. An inter-

view with his grandson and namesake, who is peacefully passing his days as Somerville's oldest (native) citizen, in the home of his ancestors on Elm street, should not be missed by those who have any veneration for the past services of a noteworthy family. The college on our borders, we trust, will add lustre to the name of Tufts when all of that race are dead and gone. What can Somerville do to honor those who so carefully guarded the domestic interests of this little community in days that were fraught with great deeds, but marked, as well, with an Arcadian simplicity?

During all the years which we have been considering the name of not a single teacher for the Milk Row school appears upon the records. Again, there is no evidence that the town of Charlestown had as yet incurred the expense of building a schoolhouse for this section. To judge from the records, there was never a time, after 1736, when there was no building. Perhaps its erection dated from the days when Isaac Royal was making his munificent gifts to the school without the Neck. The following are some of the brief references to a structure which stood probably where a later schoolhouse was built, on a corner of the present cemetery lot, Somerville avenue. After January, 1790, the school districts were designated by numbers, that in Charlestown proper being No. 1, and ours at Milk Row No. 2:—

February 11, 1783, to pay Samuel Tufts £9 10s for repairs at the schoolhouse.

February 24, 1785, to allow Timothy Tufts, Esq., order for repairs of schoolhouse, £5 3s.

February 7, 1791, Timothy Tufts, Esq., bill for repairing school without the Neck, 7s.

July 3, 1792, Joseph Adams' bill for repairing school No. 2, £2 4s 7d.

[To be continued.]

INDEX

- Abbie, Aunt (Tufts), 41.
Abbott, Mrs. Hull, 45.
Abbott, Rev. Mr. Hull, 45.
Adams, Anna, 89.
Adams, Anne, 89.
Adams, Charles, 40.
Adams, Chester, 22.
Adams, Hannah, 89.
Adams, Harriet A., 22.
Adams, President John, 18.
Adams, Joseph, 22, 40, 69, 89, 92, 93.
Adams, Martha, 92.
Adams, Mary, 89.
Adams, Nathan, 69.
Adams, Rebecca, 89.
Adams, Samuel, 40.
Adams, Thomas, 89.
Aldersey Street, Somerville, 71.
Alewife Brook, 31.
Alewife Brook District, 15, 87.
Alewife Meadow, 54.
Allerdale, Lords of, 49.
Allerdale Ward, 49.
Ames, Governor Oliver, 31.
Anderson, Mistress Rebecca, 18.
Andover, Mass., 68.
Andros, Governor, 31.
Ann Street, Boston, 4.
"Arbella, The," 29.
Arlington, Mass., 15, 38, 56, 74, 87.
Ash Street, Boston, 51.
Austin Street, Somerville, 3.
Baldwin, George Rumford, 3.
Baldwin, Loammi, 2, 3.
Barrett, Samuel, Jr., 11.
Bartlett, Hon. Josiah, M. D., 48.
Bell Rock, Malden, 58.
Big Bethel, 35.
Billerica, Mass., 1, 7, 9.
Bishop of London, 18.
Blackstone, Lone Settler of Boston, 30.
Blackstone Street, Boston, 4.
"Blessing of the Bay, The," 33.
Booth, Dr. E. C., 20, 89, 92.
Boston Avenue, Somerville, 3.
Boston Gazette, 65.
Boston & Lowell Railroad, 8.
Boston & Maine Railroad, 10.
Botanic Gardens, Cambridge, 75.
Boles, John, 41.
Bowman, Francis, 38.
Bowman, Hon. Selwyn Z., 42.
Bowman, Zadoc, 42.
Bradish, Hannah, 65.
Bradshaw, John, 16.
Bradshaw, Jonathan, 68.
Bradstreet, Samuel, 43.
Brattle Street, Cambridge, 51, 52.
Brattle, William, 55.
Bredge, Mathew, Sr., 83.
Breed's Hill, Charlestown, 47.
Brigade Band of Boston, 2.
Brigham, Berwick on Tweed, 50.
Brigham, Children of Thomas and Mercy, 56.
Brigham, Mercy, 53.
Brigham, Norfolk Co., Eng., 50.
Brigham, Peter B., 56.
Brigham, Peter T., Esq., 53.
Brigham, Thomas, The Puritan, 49.
Brigham, Town of, Duffield, Eng., 49.
Brigham, William E., 49.
Brigham, W. I. T., 51.
British Museum, 73.
Brighton, Mass., 53, 79.
Broadway, Somerville, 22, 31.
Broadway Park, 3, 31.
Brooks, Captain Caleb, 16.
Brooks Estate, West Medford, 3.
Brooks (family), 42.
Brown, Jonathan, 41.
Bullard, Colonel Samuel, 38.
Bunker Hill, Charlestown, 66.
Bunker Hill National Bank, 21.
Bunker Hill Tavern, 7.
Burgoyne (General), 60.
Burke (Edmand), 50.
Burr, Samuel, 14.
Bury Street, Edmonds, 25.
Calder, Captain, 67.
Calendar Close Rolls, 50.
Call, Caleb, 91.
Calley, Lydia (Stimpson), 65.
Calley, Robert, 65.

- Cambridge, 9, 31, 47, 49, 50, 51, 55,
 74, 75, 76, 78, 80, 82, 83, 84, 85.
 Cambridge, First so Called, 75.
 Cambridge Cemetery, 74.
 Cambridge, Eng., 25.
 "Cambridge Farms," 84, 85.
 Cambridge Gas Light Company, 70.
 Cambridge Observatory, 75.
 Canada, 86.
 Canal Street, Boston, 4.
 Carleton, S. A., 42.
 Carter, Ruel, 2.
 Cartwrite (Carteret), Philip, 16.
 Central Club Association, 21.
 Chamber of Commerce, Boston, 70.
 Champney, Richard, 76.
 Charles, King, 77.
 Charles River, 4, 27, 51, 54, 56, 74.
 Charlestown, 3, 5, 7, 9, 11, 16, 18,
 19, 20, 29, 30, 44, 47, 48, 49, 53,
 60, 65, 74, 88, 89, 90.
 Charlestown. The Schools of, Be-
 yond the Neck, 87-93.
 Charlestown Schools in the Eigh-
 teenth Century, 11-20.
 Charlestown Schools Within the
 Peninsula, 43-48, 64-69.
 Chelmsford, Mass., 1, 7.
 Chelsea, Mass., 71.
 City Square, Charlestown, 30.
 Clarendon Hill, 54, 56.
 Clark, Joan, 73.
 Clark, Sarah, 65.
 Cleveland, Aaron, 14.
 Clopton, Thomasine, 26.
 Coggan, John, 26.
 Coitmore, Martha, 26.
 Cole, John F., 40.
 Colonies, United, of New England,
 30.
 Conant's Island, 30.
 Concord, Mass., 47, 77, 78, 82, 83,
 84, 85.
 Concord Bridge, 38.
 Concord, N. H., 6.
 Concord River, 1, 9, 31.
 Connecticut, 74.
 Cooper, John, 78, 79, 80.
 Cooper, Lydia, 73, 78, 80.
 Cordis, Captain, 67.
 Corlet, Elijah, 82.
 Cotton, —, 74.
 Cotton, Anna (Moses), 21.
 Cotton, Mary Belle, 21.
 Cotton, William Wallace, 21.
 Countess of Lincoln, 27.
 Cowes, Isle of Wight, 29.
 Cracbone, Gilbert, 76.
 Cradock, Governor, 27, 31.
 Cross Street, Boston, 4.
 Cross Street, Somerville, 22, 24, 43.
 Crusades, The, 50.
 Culverwell, —, 25.
 Cushing, Matthew, 14, 44.
 Cushing, Sarah (Loring), 44.
 Cushing, Solomon, 44.
 Cutter, Daniel, 69.
 Cutter, Edward, 24.
 Cutter, Fitch, 24.
 Cutter, —, 24.
 Dame, Elizabeth, 19.
 Dana, S. L., 9.
 Danforth, Nicholas, 52.
 Danforth, Deputy Governor
 Thomas, 55.
 Danforth, Thomas, 53.
 Dedham, Mass., 88.
 Defence, Ship, 73, 74, 79.
 Derwent, Cumberlandshire, Eng.,
 49.
 Despeaux, Helen M., 36.
 Devonshire Street, Boston, 30.
 Dickering Wapentake, East Rid-
 ing, Yorkshire, Eng., 49.
 Dix, Joel, 9.
 Dogget, John, 51.
 Domesday Book, 50.
 Dorchester, Mass., 48.
 Downer (family), 43.
 Drake's History of Middlesex
 County, 5, 9, 60.
 Dudley, Deputy Governor Thomas,
 27, 28, 33, 52.
 Dunning's Coal Wharf, 3.
 Dutton, H. W. & Son, 56.
 Eddy, Caleb, 8, 9.
 Edmands, John, 66.
 Edward II., King, 50.
 Edwardston, Eng., 25.
 Edgerly, Adine Fitz (Pratt), 38.
 Edgerly, Annie E. W. (Mixer), 38.
 Edgerly, Caroline, 38.
 Edgerly, Charles Brown, 38.
 Edgerly, Edward Everett, 36, 38.
 Edgerly, Helen M. (Despeaux), 38.
 Edgerly, John S., 36-43, 65.
 Edgerly, John Woods, 38.
 Edgerly, Madeline Lemalfa, 38.
 Edgerly, Samuel, 37.
 Edgerly Schoolhouse, 43.
 Edgerly, Thomas, 37, 43.
 Eldridge, —, 42.
 Elliot, —, 32.
 Elliot, Charles D., 25, 56, 59, 70.

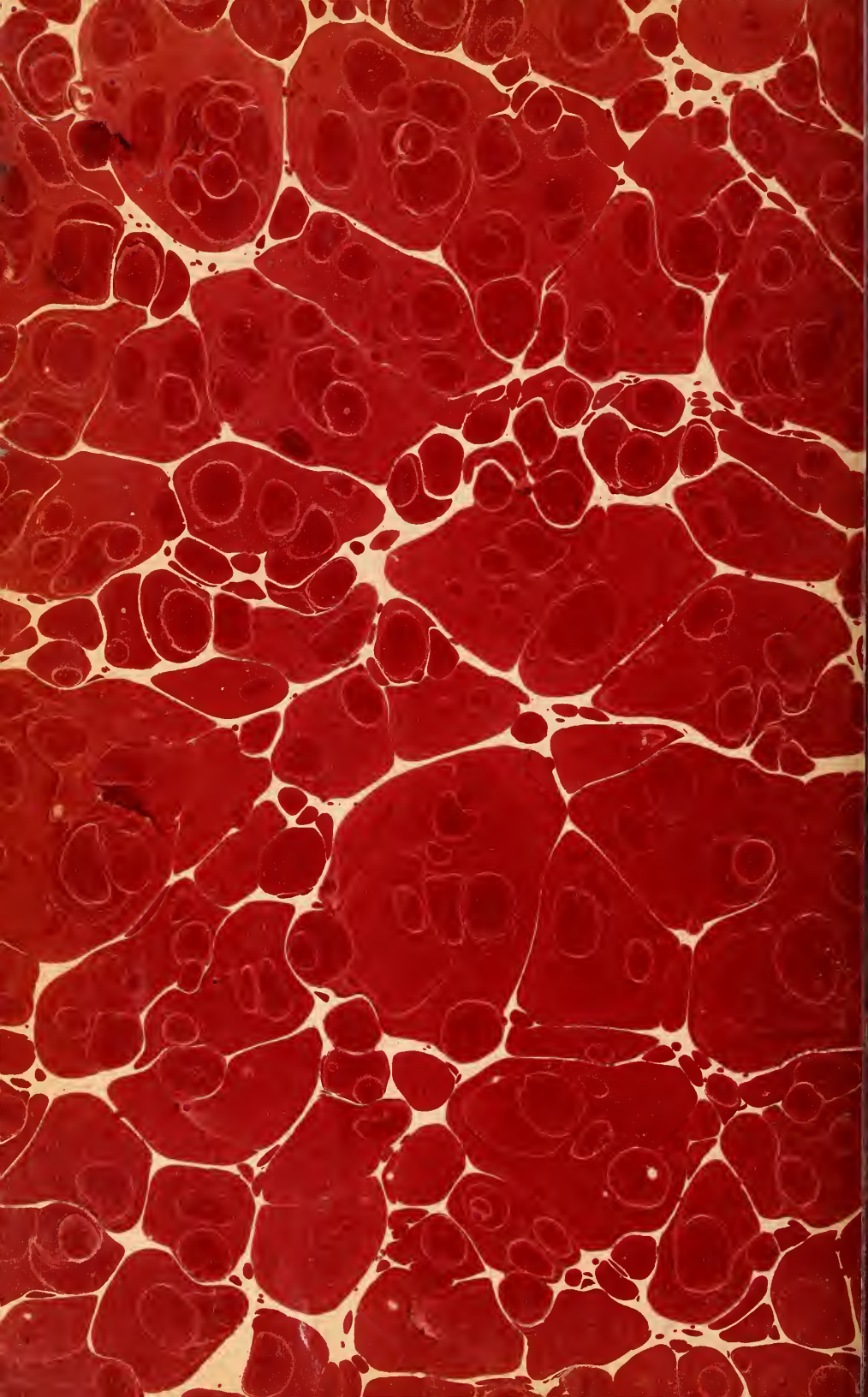
- Emerson, John S., 57.
 Endecott, —, 29.
 Essex, Eng., 25.
 Everett, Hon. Edward, 38, 65.
 Everett, Governor, 24.
 "Faire Grammar School," 52, 82.
 Fillebrown (family), 24.
 First Congregational (Unitarian)
 Church of Somerville, 21.
 "First Church Gathering," 75.
 Fiske, David, 78, 84.
 Fiske, David, Sr., 83.
 Fitz, Abel, 20.
 Fitz, N. E., 42.
 Foorth, Mary, 25.
 Forster, Charles, 41.
 Forster School, 42.
 Fort Washington, 51.
 Forth Willm, 25.
 Fort Winthrop, 30.
 Foss, Sam Walter, 62.
 Foster, Captain, 48.
 Foye, John, 12.
 Framingham, Mass., 78, 86.
 Francis, Nathaniel, 16.
 Franklin Park, 7.
 Franklin Street, Somerville, 24.
 Fresh Pond, 54, 74.
 Fresh Pond Meadow, 53.
 Frost, Abigail, 90.
 Frost, Joseph, 13, 15, 16.
 Frothingham, Historian, 47.
 Frothingham's History of Charles-
 town, 19, 59.
 Frothingham, Deacon Samuel, 14,
 67.
 Furber, William H., 60.
 Gardner, Henry, 16.
 Gardner Locks, 3.
 Gardner Row District, 15, 87.
 Gardner, Samuel, 91.
 Garrad, Margaret, 73.
 "General Sullivan, The," 26.
 George III., King, 38.
 Gibson's Lock, 3.
 Gilman, Charles E., 38.
 Glines, Jacob T., 43.
 Goodwin, Timothy, 44.
 Governor's Garden, 30.
 Governor's Island, 30.
 Great Stanbridge, Eng., 25.
 Greaves, Thomas, Esq., 12, 14.
 "Green, The," 30.
 Griffin, —, 22.
 Groton, Eng., 25, 35.
 Groton Manor, England, 25.
 Hadley, Eng., 25.
 Hale, Edward Everett, 39.
 Hamlet, William, 53.
 Hancock, Rev. John, 84.
 Hanover Street, Boston, 4.
 Harding (family), 43.
 Harlackenden, Roger, Esq., 75.
 Harris, Cary, 48.
 Harris, Thaddeus Mason, D. D., 48.
 Harris, William, 46, 47.
 Harris, Captain William, 48, 64, 67.
 Hartt, Abijah, 44.
 Harvard College, 18, 44, 48, 65, 70,
 82.
 Harvard Square, 75, 78, 82.
 Harvard University, 9, 51, 66.
 Hastings, Samuel, 79.
 Hawes, Frank Mortimer, 11, 43, 64,
 87.
 Hawkins, Nathaniel, 89, 90, 91.
 Hay, John, 67.
 Hayes, A. A., 9.
 Hayes, John S., 36, 60.
 Haymarket Square, Boston, 4.
 Hays, —, 67.
 Hayward, N., 88.
 Hemans, —, 64.
 Henley, Samuel, 43.
 Henley, Samuel, Esq., 67.
 Henry I., 50.
 Henry VIII., 25.
 Hills, John, 66.
 Hills, Thomas, 66.
 Hillsboro, N. H., 38.
 Hingham, Mass., 34, 44.
 Historic Genealogical Register,
 New England, 80.
 "Historic Heights and Points," 60.
 History of Medford, Brooks-Usher,
 15.
 Hittenger, —, 40, 65.
 Holbrook, Samuel, 68.
 Hooker, —, 74.
 Hopkins Classical School, 70.
 Horn Pond, 2.
 Horn Pond Brook, 3.
 Horn Pond House, 3, 7.
 Horn Pond Locks, 2, 3.
 Hotten, Camden, 50.
 Houghton (family), 24.
 Hunt, William, 55.
 Hurd, Mercy, 55.
 Hutchinson, Samuel, 16.
 Increase, Ship, 73.
 Ipswich, Mass., 78.
 Jackson, Dr. Charles T., 9.
 Jackson, Edward, 76.
 Jackson, Patrick T., Esq., 8.

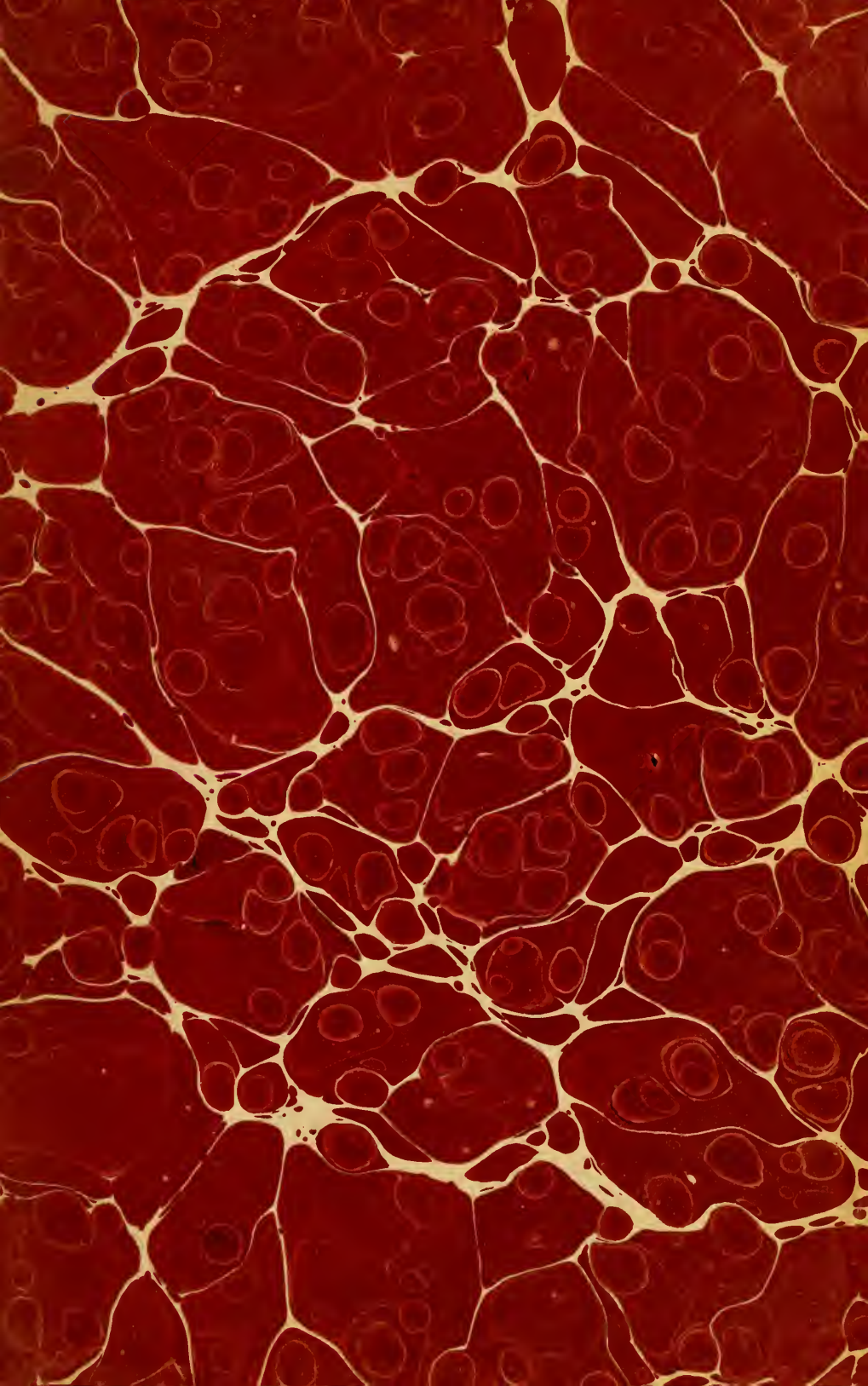
- Jackson, Richard, 76.
 James, King, 27, 28, 77.
 Jane, 88.
 Jaques, Colonel, 24, 41.
 Jaques, William, 41.
 Jenner, Thomas, Town Clerk, 11.
 Jenny, 88.
 Johnson, John, 82.
 Jones, Dorcas, 85.
 Jones, Ruth, 68.
 Keene, Sarah A. (Vinal), 71.
 Kendall's Boston Brass Band, 2.
 Kent, Benjamin, 88.
 Kent, Ebenezer, 43, 88.
 Kent, Joseph, 14, 15, 16, 88.
 Kent, Lucy, 89.
 Kent, Mehitable, 88.
 Kent, Rebecca, 88, 89.
 Kent, Samuel, 10, 88, 89.
 Kent, Samuel, Jr., 89.
 Kent, Sarah, 89.
 Kent, Stephen, 88.
 Kent Street, Somerville, 88.
 Kent, Hon. William H., 88.
 Kettell, Elizabeth, 6.
 Kettle, Jonathan, 12, 14.
 Lady Superior, The, 22.
 Lamson, Nathaniel, 16.
 Leland, Caleb W., 38.
 Lemmon, Joseph, 14.
 Levett, Captain, 29.
 Lewis' Wharf, 70.
 Lexington, 47, 71, 74, 85.
 Lexington, First Church Estab-
 lished in, 83.
 Lidgett, Charles, 31.
 Lincoln, Mass., 74, 85.
 Lincolnshire, Eng., 27.
 Local History, Teaching of, in the
 Public Schools, 57-64.
 London, Eng., 26, 73.
 Longfellow, H. W., 82.
 Lord Macaulay, 64.
 Lovell's Island, 12, 13.
 Lowell, Mass., 4, 5, 6, 8, 9.
 Lowell Road, 3.
 Lowell & Nashua Railroad, 10.
 Luxford, —, 33.
 Lynn Farm, 12.
 Lyon, The Ship, 32.
 Magoun, —, 40.
 Main Street (Broadway), Somer-
 ville, 22.
 Main Street, Charlestown, 3.
 Main Street, Medford, 3.
 Malden, Mass., 12, 58, 66.
 Mallet, Isaac, 66, 67.
 Manet, Thomas, 76.
 Maple Meadow Brook, 2.
 Marlboro, Mass., 55.
 Mason, Rebecca, 48.
 Mason, Thaddeus, Esq., 48.
 Massachusetts Bay, 27.
 Massachusetts Bav Company, 27.
 Massachusetts Genealogical So-
 ciety, 65.
 Massachusetts Historical Society,
 63.
 Massachusetts Medical Association,
 18.
 Mather, Cotton, 30, 35.
 McGill, Robert, 7.
 Medford, 3, 7, 10, 15, 16, 31, 33, 55,
 69, 87.
 Medford Side District, 15.
 Medford-street School, 70.
 Menotime Bridge, 75.
 Menotomy (West Cambridge), 18.
 Meredith, N. H., 37.
 Merriam, Joseph, 78, 82.
 Merrimac River, 1, 5, 10, 27.
 Middlesex Bleachery, 88.
 Middlesex Canal, 22.
 Middlesex Canal, Course of, The, 1,
 2, 3, 4.
 Middlesex Canal, Fare on, 5.
 Middlesex Canal, Historical Sketch
 of, concluded, 1-11.
 Middlesex Canal, Locks on, 1, 2, 3.
 Middlesex Canal, Merchandise
 Boats on, 4, 5.
 Middlesex Canal, Passage Boats on,
 6.
 Middlesex Canal, Rafts on, 6.
 Middlesex Canal, Regulations of, 7.
 Middlesex Canal, Toll on, 4.
 Middlesex Canal Tow Path, 7.
 Middlesex Village, 1, 5, 9, 10.
 Milborne, Captain Peter, 29.
 Milk Row, District of, 15, 87, 88.
 "Milk Row" Primary School, 70.
 Milk Row School, 89, 90, 91, 93.
 Milk Street, Boston, 30.
 Miller, James, 90.
 Miller, Richard, 12.
 Miller, Stephen, 90, 91.
 Mistick, 31, 32.
 Mistick River, 29.
 Mitchell, Luther, 22, 38.
 Mitchell, —, 79.
 Mitchell, Nathaniel, 22.
 Morse, Rev. Abner, 49, 51, 52, 53,
 55, 56.
 Mount Benedict, 3, 9.

- Mt. Auburn Cemetery, 74.
 Much Bromley, Essex County, Eng., 73.
 Mystick Bridge, 19.
 Mystic Lake, 11.
 Mystic Pond, 36, 87.
 Mystic River, 3, 6, 30, 31.
 Mystic Trotting Park, 3.
 Mystic Valley Railroad, 11.
 Nahumkeck (Salem), 29.
 Nashua & Lowell Railroad, 9.
 Natascot, 32.
 Nathan Tufts Park, 20.
 Nayland, Suffolk County, Eng., 13, 82.
 Neighborhood Sketch No. 7, 22.
 Neighborhood Sketch No. 7, Map of, 23.
 Newell, Eliphalet, 67.
 "Newe Towne," 74, 75.
 New York, 44.
 Nichols' Inn, 2.
 Nichols' Lock, 2.
 North Market Street, Boston, 4.
 North Street, Boston, 4.
 Norton, Rev. Jacob, 18.
 Nowell, Increase, 28.
 Nun's Well, 50.
 Oakman, —, 42.
 Oakes, Edward, 76, 79.
 oburne (Woburn), 83.
 Odin House, The, 38.
 Olin, John, Jr., 65.
 Old England, 27.
 Old Powder House, 47, 87.
 Old South Church, 30.
 Old State House, 4.
 Outline of Study of Somerville History, 60, 61.
 Oxbow, 2.
 Oyster Bay, N. H., 37.
 Paige, —, 51, 73.
 Palestine, 50.
 Parker, Benjamin, 16.
 Parker, Captain John, 71.
 Parker, Rev. Theodore, 71.
 Parkman, Dr. Samuel, 38.
 Paul Revere's Ride, 60.
 Payne, Edward, Master, 51.
 Payson, Samuel, 68.
 Peggy, 88.
 Perry, Hon. A. A., 42.
 Philip, King, 86.
 Phillips, Elizabeth, 18.
 Phillips, Henry, 12.
 Phipps, Frances, 68.
 Phipps, John, 68.
 Phipps, Joseph, 16, 68.
 Phipps Street, Charlestown, 18, 90.
 Pierce, —, 29.
 Pierce, Augusta Smith, 71.
 Pierce, James, 16.
 Pierce, John, 71.
 Pierce, Sarah, 71.
 Pierce, William, 32.
 Pigeon, John, 88.
 Plymouth, Mass., 30.
 Poor (family), 42.
 Portsmouth, N. H., 21, 37.
 "Pound, The," 24.
 Powder House, 20, 31.
 Prentice, Rev. Thomas, 45.
 Prospect Hill, 38, 57, 60.
 Putnam (General), 58.
 Quincy Market, 4.
 "Raising of the Flag on Prospect Hill," 62.
 Rand, John, 43.
 Rand, Samuel, 16.
 Rand, William, 16.
 Reed, Seth, 16.
 Revere, Mass., 71.
 Revere, Paul, 60.
 Rice, Edmund, 55.
 Riddle, George, 42.
 Ring, —, 22.
 River Meadow Brook, 1.
 Rockie Meadow, 54.
 Roxbury, Mass., 9, 38.
 Royal House, 3.
 Royal, Isaac, 19, 20, 31, 93.
 Royal, Isaac, Esq., 19.
 Royal, Isaac, Sr., 19.
 Russell, Daniel, 11, 12, 14, 46.
 Russell, Rev. Daniel, 12.
 Russell, James, 43.
 Russell, Joseph, 18.
 Russell, Philemon, 91.
 Russell, Philemon R., 18.
 Russell, Thomas, 31.
 Russell, Walter, 89.
 Sagamore, John, 31.
 Saltonstall, Richard, 23, 50, 51, 52.
 Sargent, Aaron, 40.
 Sawyer (family), 43.
 School Committees, 1736-1753, 16.
 Schoolmaster, Itinerant, 17.
 Scituate, Mass., 70.
 Scotland, 35.
 Sewall, Judge, 84.
 Shawsheen River, 1.
 Shawshine (Billerica), 53.
 Sheafe, Edward, Jr., 43.
 Shepherd, Rev. Thomas, 73.

- Shirley, Governor, 31.
Simson, Joseph, 11, 12, 65.
Skelton, —, 29.
Skinner, John, 16, 17.
Smith, —, 18.
Smith, Betsey, 37.
Smith, John, 60.
Somerville Historical Society,
Meetings of, 72.
Somerville Hospital, 70.
Somerville National Bank, 70.
"Somerville Past and Present," 59.
Southey, Robert, 63.
Sowhegum Farm, 14.
Sparohauke, Nathaniel, 79.
Sparks Street, Cambridge, 51.
Spencer (family), 43.
Spot Pond, 11.
Sprague, John, 12.
Spring Lane, Boston, 30.
Standish, Miles, 60.
State Board of Education, 63.
Stearns, Sarah, 82.
Stearns, William, 24.
Stevens, John, 14.
Stickney (family), 42.
Stimson, Andrew, Jr., 12.
Stimson, Joseph, 12.
Stimpson, Rev. Joseph, 65.
Stoddard Locks, 2.
Stone, Daniel, 78.
Stone, David, 77, 78, 85.
Stone, Deacon, 76, 79, 84, 86.
Stone, Elizabeth, 78.
Stone, Gregory, Children of, 78.
Stone, Gregory, "Deacon," 76, 79.
Stone, Gregory, Ancestry of, 73.
Stone, Gregory, Part of Inventory
of, 81.
Stone, Gregory, and Some of His
Descendants, 73-86.
Stone, Gregory, Will of, 80.
Stoneham, Mass., 69.
Stone, Constable Isack, 83.
Stone, John, 78, 80.
Stone, Samuel, 77, 78, 80, 82, 83, 84,
85, 86.
Stone, Deacon Samuel, 82, 85.
Stone, Samuel, East, 85.
Stone, Samuel, Sr., 83, 85.
Stone, Samuel, West, 85.
Stone, Sara A., 73.
Stone, Sarah, 78.
Stone, Simon, 73, 79.
Stone, Symond, 73.
Stower River, 25.
Strickland, Charles, 42.
Sudbury, Mass., 78.
Sullivan, James, 8.
Susan and Ellin, 50.
Swan, Samuel, Jr., 67.
Sweetser, Abigail, 12.
Sweetser, Henry Phillips, 65, 67.
Sweetser, Colonel John, 38, 65.
Sweetser, Seth, 12, 44, 64, 65, 67.
Sycamore Street, Somerville, 42.
Symmes, Jack, 69.
Symmes, William, 16.
Talbot Mills, 1.
Temple, Robert, 31.
Temple, Robert, Jr., 31.
"Ten Hills," 30, 31, 33, 41.
"The Farms," 78, 79, 82, 83, 84, 85.
"The Farmers," 83.
"The Rocks," 53, 55, 56.
Thorning, —, 24.
Three Pole Lane, 24.
Tindall, Margaret, 26.
Torrey, —, 22, 24.
Town Hill, 67.
Trevett, Robert, 12.
Tring, Hertfordshire, Eng., 65.
Trinity College, 25.
Trumbull, Frances, 68.
Trumbull, James, 67.
Trumbull, Phoebe (Johnson), 67.
Trumbull, Timothy, 67, 68.
Tufts, Abby, 22.
Tufts, Albert Clifford, 20, 21.
Tufts, Anne Adams, 89.
Tufts, Asa, 22, 42.
Tufts, Charles, 70.
Tufts College, 70.
Tufts, Cotton, 17, 18.
Tufts, Daniel, 24.
Tufts, Edmund, 22, 38, 41.
Tufts, Elizabeth, 21.
Tufts, "Esquire," 91.
Tufts, Gilbert, 42.
Tufts, James, 16.
Tufts, Mary Jane (Fitz), 20.
Tufts, Nathan, 20, 21, 89, 92.
Tufts, Nathan, Jr., 20.
Tufts, Nathan, 2nd, 42.
Tufts, Nathan, Sr., 38.
Tufts, Oliver, 38.
Tufts, Peter, 16, 66, 88, 89, 92.
Tufts, Peter, Jr., 69, 89.
Tufts, Rebecca, 89.
Tufts, Samuel, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93.
Tufts, Dr. Simon, 18.
Tufts, Timothy, 66, 89, 90, 91, 92.
Tufts, Timothy, Esq., 93.
Tufts, W., 89.

- Tufts, Widow, 24.
 Tufts, William, 42.
 Turner, John, 66.
 Turnpike, Medford, 22.
 Underwood, Joseph, 11.
 Unitarian Church, 40.
 Ursuline Convent, 22.
 Usher, Governor, 19, 31.
 Vane, Sir Henry, 33.
 Vassall, William, 28.
 Venus, 88.
 Vermont, 56.
 Vinal, Anna Parker, 71.
 Vinal, Josephine, 71.
 Vinal, Leonora, 71.
 Vinal, Leslie T., 71.
 Vinal, Lydia (Stone), 70.
 Vinal, Martha Adams, 71.
 Vinal, Mary Lowell, 71.
 Vinal, Quincy Adams, 37, 70.
 Vinal, Robert A., 70.
 Vinal, Deacon Robert, 37, 70.
 Violet, 88.
 Walters, William, 13.
 Waltham, Mass., 74.
 Wannontymies River, 31.
 Warren, Amos, 91.
 Washington (General), 58.
 Washington Hall, 48.
 Washington School, 52.
 Washington Street, Boston, 30.
 Watertown, Mass., 49, 51, 54, 73, 74,
 75, 76, 80, 82, 84, 85.
 Watertown, Original Area of, 74.
 Webster, Professor John W., 9.
 West Cambridge, 53.
 West Indies, 19.
 West Medford, Mass., 3.
 Weston, Mass., 74.
 Weymouth, Mass., 18.
 Whittemore, —, 69.
 Willoughby, Francis, 79.
 Wilmington, Mass., 2, 7, 11.
 Wilson, —, 30.
 Wilson's Tavern, 2.
 Winchester, Mass., 3.
 Windmill, or Town Hill, 48.
 Windmill Hill, Watertown, 52.
 Winnepesaukee, N. H., 37.
 Winter Hill, Somerville, 3, 19, 88.
 Winthrop, Adam, 25.
 Winthrop, Adam, Esq., 35.
 Winthrop, Ann, 32.
 Winthrop, Anne, 25.
 Winthrop, Fitz John, 35.
 Winthrop, Fort, 30.
 Winthrop, Henry, 29, 33.
 Winthrop, Governor John, 25, 26,
 31, 33, 36.
 Winthrop, John, 25-36.
 Winthrop, John, Character of, 35,
 36.
 Winthrop, John, Extracts from the
 Diary of, 25, 26, 29, 31, 32.
 Winthrop, John, Residences of, 30,
 31.
 Winthrop, John, Jr., 31, 35.
 Winthrop, Margaret, 33.
 Winthrop, Hon. Robert C., 35.
 Winthrop, Steven, 35.
 Winthrop, Major Theodore, 35.
 Winthrop, Waitstill, 35.
 Woburn, Mass., 2, 7, 8, 9, 84.
 Wood, D., 89.
 Wood, David, Jr., 67, 68.
 Woodbury, —, 41.
 Woodbury (family), 43.
 Woods, Henry F., 42.
 Woods, Lydia Watts, 38.
 Woods, Moses, 38.
 Woods, Moses, 1st, 38.
 Wordsworth, William, 50.
 Wright, Timothy, 13.
 Wyeth, Nicholas, 53, 68.
 Wyman, —, 65, 67, 88, 90.
 "Ye Old Burying Ground," Lexing-
 ton, 85, 86.
 Yorkshire, Eng., 49.





LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 110 760 4

